

The Skies We Seek

Posted originally on the [Archive of Our Own](http://archiveofourown.org/works/31891126) at <http://archiveofourown.org/works/31891126>.

Rating:	Not Rated
Archive Warnings:	Graphic Depictions Of Violence , Major Character Death
Fandoms:	Minecraft (Video Game) , Video Blogging RPF
Relationships:	Technoblade & TommyInnit (Video Blogging RPF) , Wilbur Soot & Technoblade , Wilbur Soot & Technoblade & TommyInnit & Phil Watson , TommyInnit & Phil Watson (Video Blogging RPF) , Clay Dream & Technoblade & TommyInnit (Video Blogging RPF) , Toby Smith Tubbo & Wilbur Soot & Technoblade & TommyInnit & Phil Watson , Ranboo & Toby Smith Tubbo & Wilbur Soot & Technoblade & Phil Watson , Ranboo & Technoblade & TommyInnit (Video Blogging RPF)
Characters:	TommyInnit (Video Blogging RPF) , Wilbur Soot , Phil Watson (Video Blogging RPF) , Technoblade (Video Blogging RPF) , Toby Smith Tubbo , Ranboo (Video Blogging RPF) , Niki Nihachu , Floris Fundy , Clay Dream (Video Blogging RPF) , GeorgeNotFound (Video Blogging RPF) , Sapnap (Video Blogging RPF) , Alexis Quackity , Karl Jacobs , Cara CaptainPuffy , Jack Manifold , Sam Awesamdude
Additional Tags:	Traumatized TommyInnit (Video Blogging RPF) , Hybrid TommyInnit (Video Blogging RPF) , Scared TommyInnit (Video Blogging RPF) , Touch-Starved TommyInnit (Video Blogging RPF) , TommyInnit Nearly Dies (Video Blogging RPF) , TommyInnit Needs a Break (Video Blogging RPF) , Wilbur Soot and Technoblade and TommyInnit are Siblings , TommyInnit Needs a Hug (Video Blogging RPF) , TommyInnit Needs Help (Video Blogging RPF) , TommyInnit Has Nightmares (Video Blogging RPF) , TommyInnit Has Panic Attacks (Video Blogging RPF) , TommyInnit Has Trust Issues (Video Blogging RPF) , TommyInnit Has Abandonment Issues (Video Blogging RPF) , TommyInnit Has PTSD (Video Blogging RPF) , TommyInnit Has a Bad Time (Video Blogging RPF) , Alternate Universe - Superheroes/Superpowers , Implied/Referenced Child Abuse , Violence , Crimes & Criminals , Crime Fighting , Adoptive Parent Phil Watson (Video Blogging RPF) , Protective Sleepy Bois Inc , Protective Phil Watson (Video Blogging RPF) , Protective Wilbur Soot , Protective Technoblade (Video Blogging RPF) , Kidnapping , Older Siblings Wilbur Soot and Technoblade , Wilbur Soot and Technoblade are Siblings , Hybrids , Hurt/Comfort , Hero Technoblade (Video Blogging RPF) , Villain Clay Dream (Video Blogging RPF) , Hero Wilbur Soot , Hero Phil Watson (Video Blogging RPF) , Superpowers , Superheroes , Supervillains , Temporary Character Death , oop he dead
Language:	English
Series:	Part 1 of Born to Fly, Destined to Burn
Collections:	

[sbi fics that cleanses my soul](#), [Cry.](#), [so what im a tommyinnit kin](#), [Dream SMP fics that butter my bread](#), [Completed works that I would most likely come back to when feeling nostalgic](#), [Found family make heart go brrr](#), [Best Dream SMP Fanfics](#), [Found family to make me feel something](#), [Found family for the soul](#), [finished fics](#), [We Love Angst In This Household](#), [SBI Fics for the soul](#), [lee's favorite fics that you should definitely read as well :\)](#), [Dream smp fics that help me live](#), [Favorite fanfics that I already finished](#), [favourite fanfictions](#), [wow i really am reading mc fanfiction](#) 🥰🥰, [Sleepy Boy's Inc. Foster AU's](#), [Best Stories](#), [thinksmoon's collection of best sbi fics](#), [ctommy ctommy chomolo chommy](#), [Technoblade and Instincts: The Saga ft. Tommyinnit](#), [Found family sbi has my <3](#), [completed mcyt/dsmp fanfics that are pog](#), [still cool fics :\)](#), [Rebel's favorite fics!\(smp\)](#), [All kinds of SBI fics](#), [SleepyBois Fics that I like <3](#), [Space and Superhero AUs That Are Actually Worth Your Time](#), [SBI \(an a lil crimeboys/bedrock bros shhhhh\) completed fics](#), [moth's fanfic recommendations](#), [fanfics that hurt me but i love them \(authors should pay for my therapy\)](#), [Phil's the kind of a guy to look at the child and ask "Is anyone gonna adopt them?" and not wait for an answer](#), [fanfic for the soul <3](#), [hixpatch's all time favorites](#), [Things](#), [Satan's Favourite Blockmen](#), [dsmp fics that have kept me alive](#) 💋🥰🥰, [the works i can and will die for](#), [Very Good DSMP fics](#), [completed fics](#), [Sad stories over 40k](#), [a collection of every dsmp fic i've read](#), [DSB\(DreamSmpBooks\)](#), [dsmp fanfics i would suggest to anyone](#), [the good shit](#), [my fav fics ever - mostly sbi that are tommy centric](#), [the graveyard of my feelings](#)

Stats:

Published: 2021-06-12 Completed: 2023-05-26 Words: 66,324 Chapters: 25/25

The Skies We Seek

by [Batmansmom](#)

Summary

"Techno?"

"Yeah Tommy?"

"What does the sky look like?"

Techno paused, the question, like most of Tommy's questions made his heart ache for reasons he didn't understand.

"I'll show it to you one day" he doesn't know why he says that, he knows by now not to make promises he doesn't know he can keep.

"Really?"

"I promise" and he swears to himself he'll find a way to keep it.

Or Techno is a hero on a mission that quickly gets derailed when he meets Tommy, a boy who's spent his whole life locked in one room with only Dream, the biggest villain of the century, for company.

Notes

Hey guys! New story alert!! If you like big brother Technoblade as much as I do, then you're going to like this one for sure. I had a lot of fun writing this first chapter so let me know what you think!

See the end of the work for more [notes](#)

- Inspired by [I'm Still An Ugly](#) by [AlliRose09 \(orphan_account\)](#)
- Inspired by [A Sky Underground](#) by [fishstixx](#)

Mission Theseus

Technoblade had expected a lot of things when he first accepted this mission. He had expected months upon months of waiting, he expected to be forced to do things that were against his morals, he expected to be interrogated, to have to give up information on his closest friends and allies and, as expected, all of these things had come to pass. Infiltrating the biggest known villain organization in the world as a well known hero hadn't exactly been easy but it had all been worth it. He was finally exactly where he needed to be to help take this whole thing down, Dream's inner circle.

He had to admit though the first meeting on the inside wasn't exactly jam packed with helpful information. It was more of an introduction of sorts and apparently when he was brought in by Dream it was because Dream had a special mission in mind for him. Technoblade, understandably, wasn't exactly super thrilled about this special mission. He had expected to run into something like this but he had hoped, perhaps naively, that he would have found out enough useful information to avoid having to torture or kill another person. Regardless, the mission came first, before even his morals, his ability to set such things aside had been the reason this mission was given to him after all.

"So," Technoblade said as he followed Dream through the halls of the main base "what's this special mission?"

"You'll see soon enough" Dream answered as he opened a door and led Technoblade down the stairs to the basement level of the base.

Techno frowned, an uneasy feeling settled in his chest. This level, as far as he was aware, was strictly storage. There was nothing else down here. Or at least there isn't supposed to be according to his intel. He followed Dream, plans already forming in his head, escape routes and next moves at the forefront of his mind as he followed him all the way to a metal door in the very back of the basement. The metal door itself appeared pretty plain, if it weren't for the fact that there were six locks on it, all but one were built into the door with the clear intention of keeping something in rather than keeping people out. Only one was there to keep people out.

"Uh" Techno hesitated taking a step back as Dream approached the door "not gonna lie to ya Dream that door is kinda sus"

Dream laughed a little "I suppose so, but make no mistake it's only that way to keep what's inside safe" he said as he approached the door.

Techno frowns a little as the first lock clicks open, was there some kind of weapon maybe behind the door? But that still didn't make sense, The locks were on the outside, what kind of weapon needed to be kept in? Techno took a step back cautiously as another lock clicked open. Dream had said the locks were to keep what's inside safe, but he clearly wasn't as scared about anyone else coming into the room as he was about whatever was inside getting out. The last three locks clicked open quickly and Dream reached over and turned the

doorknob pushing the door open walking into the room. Techno hesitated for a moment glancing back at the stairs that led out of the basement before sighing and following Dream into the room.

Techno had been expecting a lot of things, weapons, some kind of trained animal, maybe even some kind of monster, he had not expected a child.

“Dream!” The boy cheered happily standing up from where he was sitting on the floor. The blond ran right into the masked man’s waiting arms. “I missed you” he said softly as the villain pulled away.

“I missed you too Tommy but I didn’t come here for fun. It’s time you paid me back for everything” Dream said either not noticing or not caring about how the boy’s face fell at the words.

“Right, right of course!” the boy, Tommy, stuttered taking a step back and forcing himself to stand a bit straighter “I want to be useful to you”

“And you will be,” Dream assured him.

As Techno watched the interaction from the doorway, he had to admit this was giving him some bad vibes. As he looked around the room, it looked like a fairly standard bedroom. There was a bed and a wooden desk with some kind of plant on it and a bookshelf with a few books, more plants and some toys. Above them, going around the entire room were LED strip lights, the kind that a lot of teenagers liked to have in their bedrooms. There was another door in the room that he assumed led to a bathroom, overall it seemed pretty normal. But as he looked more carefully he came to a silent realization that the only kind of technology in the room were the lights. There were no phones, no tvs, no laptops, no access whatsoever to anything that could keep the child in the room updated on the outside world. On further investigation, there wasn’t even a clock. And with no windows in the room, Techno silently wondered how this kid kept track of time or if he was able to.

“Technoblade” Dream said, interrupting Techno’s stream of thoughts, the hero turned towards the villain and the child “This is Tommy, my little brother” now that threw Techno for a moment. As far as he was aware, Dream had no living relatives, there certainly wasn’t any record of the man having a younger brother alive or otherwise.

‘Then again’ Techno thought to himself ‘no one even seemed to know there was a kid here in the first place, so I guess it’s possible’

“I want you to train him to fight” Dream continued and Techno paused looking between Dream to the stick figure of a child and then back at Dream.

“You can’t be serious”

Tommy didn’t know much. That was a given seeing how he spent his whole life, or at least most of it, inside the same room with his only access to the outside world being through his

overprotective guardian. Not that Dream hadn't taught him anything! Dream had taught him loads about math and reading and the world. He had taught him about rules, about responsibilities, about rewards and consequences, even about powers and the people who had abused them! Dream had given him books and puzzles, had let him try different foods, had given him plants to care for and new clothes when his old ones no longer fit. Dream helped Tommy preen his feathers and practice his abilities and if Tommy was being really good, Dream would take him on short walks outside of his room.

Dream had taught him about life and death, and how grateful Tommy should be to Dream for giving him a home and food and clothes and books and a place where Tommy knows he is safe and loved. And Tommy was grateful! But Tommy didn't know much. He knew the sky was blue but he didn't know what shade, he knew grass was green (like his plants) but he didn't know what it felt like to walk on, he knew fire was hot but he didn't know what fire looked like. He knew there were other people in the world besides Dream, George and Sapnap but he had never met or spoken to anyone else. That is until now.

Tommy didn't know much, but he did know this. He scowled at the pink haired guy in front of him, inching closer to Dream "I don't like you" he decided, watching the stranger with distaste "I don't like you at all, can't Sapnap train me?" he asked, directing the question towards Dream who sighed in a way Tommy knew meant he was disappointed and likely losing his patience.

"Tommy" Dream said, warning in his tone that made Tommy want to run and hide and hope Dream and the stranger would just leave him alone. "Sorry about him, he doesn't meet many people, and the last time he had met someone new he was eight and he had bitten Sapnap" Tommy winced, he remembered the lesson after that had been particularly painful to learn.

"As long as he doesn't bite me I don't care" The stranger sighed "so you want me to train... him? To fight?"

"Please Techno, you're the best at hand to hand and Tommy is finally old enough to start pulling his weight. I would teach him, but between the situation in L'manburg and trying to coordinate with Quackity I've got my hands full." Dream said letting his hand settle on Tommy's shoulder, Tommy wasn't sure if he wanted to press into the contact or struggle away from it. Dream's grip on Tommy's shoulder was just a bit too tight and controlling to be comfortable but on the other hand Tommy rarely got this kind of affection.

The stranger, Techno, sighed again "Yeah alright, but in here isn't going to be big enough"

"I know" Dream nodded "I've set up a room for you and Tommy to train in, I'll show you in a moment and explain more. I just want to say goodbye to Tommy"

"You're leaving?" Tommy asked trying to ignore the pit of disappointment in his stomach. "Already?"

"I know, I'm sorry Tommy but you know how busy I am" Dream said softly, pulling the younger boy into another hug "I promise, I'll come back and visit you soon."

“Ok,” Tommy murmured trying not to show how disappointed he felt and letting himself relax into the hug, these were always his favorite parts of the visits even if they usually meant saying goodbye. “Love you”

“I know you do Tommy, I’ll be back soon” Dream said before pulling away from the younger. Tommy watched as Dream walked over to Techno and gestured towards the door. He watched as they walked away, listened as the locks clicked and sighed, he hated being alone.

These Four Walls

Chapter Summary

'Ah' Techno thought dully, keeping the same blank expression on his face 'this is a threat and a trap... perfect.'

Chapter Notes

Holy shit you guys!! Over 100 kudos already?! We were only on chapter one! Seriously thank you so much for all the support on that first chapter, between the comments and the kudos I just could not wait to get you guys more content so here we are! Enjoy <3

See the end of the chapter for more [notes](#)

Leaving the child behind, all alone in that locked room with no escape felt like the worst thing Techno could do as a hero. He scowled at the thought and tried to remind himself that this wasn't any ordinary kid, this was Dream's brother. But the look in the boy's eyes when he realized Dream was leaving made it hard to see him as just the younger brother to the biggest supervillain on the planet.

"So" Dream said as the last lock clicked into place "what did you think of him?"

Techno hesitated before settling on the truth "he's... very skinny, not a lot of muscle to work with and likely low endurance. It'll be a bit of a process but I think once we bulk him up a bit he'll be at least able to defend himself. Probably best to focus more on speed than strength with the kind of build he has although I won't know for sure until we get started"

Dream nodded in agreement with his analysis "do you have any questions about him?"

Techno had lots of questions about this strange child that's just been living in the basement of the villain's headquarters for several years, most of which he couldn't voice. "How many meals a day is he getting?"

"Usually about two, he doesn't really get the chance to exercise much."

"And what's his diet look like?"

"Mostly fruits and vegetables, he can't eat meat so we usually try to supplement that portion of his meal with something like trail mix or hummus that he can eat with the vegetables."

"So what he's vegan?"

“Vegetarian actually, he has no problem stomaching animal products.” Dream said “want to see the training room I’ve set up for you two?”

“Lead the way”

Dream nodded and started weaving his way through crates full of god knows what until they reached another metal door. This one only had one lock on it.

“This part of the basement used to be all storage but I’ve been clearing it out and renovating it for awhile” Dream said, pulling out a key and unlocking the door. He pushed it open with ease and stepped into the room “hopefully this will be suitable but if you need anything added to the room just let me know.

Techno stepped inside and curiously examined the room. It was huge, all concrete, with a massive rock climbing wall and a climbing rope hanging from the ceiling. There were mats in a section of the room, the only part of the room that was padded. There was also a weapons rack holding everything from swords to crossbows to what looked like a rocket launcher. Across from the weapons rack there were targets set up, some classic; just a circle with a few circles inside of it and a bullseye in the center, and a few that looked like people with different targets over a human's most vulnerable spot. There were a few people like targets that were adjusted depending on if the person was a hybrid or not, Techno felt a bit sick looking at the elytrian one with targets on it's wings. It reminded Techno too much of Phil and he knew immediately he wouldn't be using that one. There were also several machines such as a treadmill, an elliptical and a few weight machines that Techno knew would be handy in helping Tommy bulk up.

“This will work,” Techno said with a nod, “although we might need some lighter weights just in the beginning, depending on how much the child can lift already. When did you want us to start?”

“I was hoping the actual training part would start in a few days,” Dream said with a nod “but tomorrow I’d like it if you brought Tommy here and assessed his skills so you know where to start and what you’ll need. I know it’s a process but the sooner he starts the better I’ll feel”

Techno nodded and hesitated for a moment before deciding it was probably safe to ask this question as really it was a logical question to ask “So... can I ask why you have your little brother locked in a room in the basement?”

Dream let out a startled laugh “well jeez when you put it like that it really does look pretty bad” he chuckled “I just... be honest Techno, if any of your little hero pals knew about Tommy, knew what he was too me and how defenseless he would be against them, do you really think any of them would leave him alone? Of course not, they’d go after him, use him against me, and it would work. They’d take me down, but they’d take him down with me and I... I don’t want that for Tommy.” he paused “It’s safer this way, your reaction to his existence proves that keeping him here was the safest course of action. If you didn’t know he existed until now then none of the other heroes know either and they won’t know until Tommy can handle himself.” And then Dream turns on Techno, the weird smiley mask glinting under the lights of the training room “and if any hero finds out about Tommy, before I introduce him to the playing field, well that would be a clear indicator of a traitor having

infiltrated my operation. In which case I'd have to, regrettably, rid myself of such a strong weakness."

'Ah' Techno thought dully, keeping the same blank expression on his face 'this is a threat and a trap... perfect'.

Tommy meanwhile decided to distract himself from the too small room and deafening silence by talking to Clementine, his cast iron plant, as he watered her.

"I mean honestly Clem, that guy looked like such a dick. I don't get why Sappnap can't train me, he's a good fighter... I.... think? I mean I've never actually seen the guy fight but judging from his stories he has got to be one of the best... well, then again, I've never seen that Techno guy fight either but Dream said Techno is the best and well you know Dream. It's only the best of the best for him." Tommy rambled pausing to give the plant a chance to respond. "You are totally right Clem as always you are the smartest plant I know." And with that he set down the cup he had been using to water her and scooped up Clementine's pot. Careful not to shake the plant too much he carried the pot with him over to his bookshelf before lowering himself down so he was sitting in front of it criss-cross applesauce before setting Clementine down next to him.

"What should we read today, do you think?" he asked as he scanned the small but well-loved selection in front of him. "There's 'The World Encyclopedia of Trees' we haven't looked through that one in awhile "or there's 'Flowerpaedia' that one's got some good pictures or if we're feelin more words and less pictures there's always 'The Downfall of Humanity: When Heroes began to Rise' that's always an interesting read, and Dream usually likes it when we read it at least once a week." Tommy paused thoughtfully, looking down at the house plant "what do you think Clementine"

As per usual the plant didn't respond but regardless Tommy nodded "Great idea Clem, 'Peterson Field Guide to Edible Plants' it is" he said reaching for the book. He carefully removed it from the shelf and opened it up, reading every word, even the parts that weren't talking about plants. Like most of his books, there were pages missing or pictures cut out or certain paragraphs that were blacked out. Tommy didn't quite understand why Dream did this, afterall most of his books were field guides about the outside world, one Tommy knew he was never going to get the chance to experience. But still, Dream could be a bit over protective about what Tommy was exposed to and although Tommy didn't always understand why, Dream surely had his reasoning keeping that information away from Tommy. Dream only wanted what was best for Tommy.

'I am the only one who cares for you' Dream liked to say whenever Tommy wasn't being particularly grateful towards the other for being so kind to someone so useless such as himself 'don't forget that'.

And Tommy never did, he thanked Dream for every book no matter how censored, for every blanket no matter how thin, for every item of clothing no matter how ragged and for every plate of food no matter how small. He had waited and hoped and prayed for the day he could

finally, finally be useful to the person who so generously was providing for him and the day was finally arriving.

“Techno might be a bitch” Tommy said to Clementine as he turned the page of the book. “but if training with him means I get to finally be useful to Dream, then I guess it would be worth it, don’t you think Clementine?”

Clementine of course did not respond, but Tommy thought that if she could she would have agreed with him because how could being useful to Dream ever be a bad thing?

After Tommy finished the book he moved on to completing all of the puzzles Dream had gotten him. ‘I’m getting faster at this’ he noted, a bit of pride warming his chest as he finished the second one ‘maybe if I get even faster, Dream will give me a new one’ with this in mind Tommy put his full effort into completing each puzzle as quickly as he could.

The only problem with completing each puzzle as quickly as he could was that all too soon Tommy finished all the puzzles. “What do we do now Clem?” he asked looking at the potted plant cocking his head to the side as silence followed his question “oh that’s a great idea!” he said excitedly, scrambling to his feet “why didn’t I think of that, but uh I don’t think you can really help me with this activity so let’s find you a good spot to watch” Tommy nodded picking up the pot. Eventually he ended up setting Clementine down on his desk again. “This seems like it would be too heavy to move so best to set you here” he said as he placed the pot back in it’s usual spot on his desk. Then he went over to his bed and collected all of his blankets and pillows, including his sheets. Carefully he started moving the little furniture he had so it was a bit closer to his bed, then he took the fitted sheet and started spreading it out over the furniture.

First he placed it carefully around the top of his bookshelf before stretching it over to his desk chair and finally onto his bed post. The fitted sheet clung tightly to the furniture creating the perfect roof for Tommy’s future fort. Then he took the thinner blankets and hung them carefully over the fitted sheet creating the fort’s walls. With that done, Tommy then focused on the interior of his fort, he took the pillows and blankets remaining and started arranging them with no real goal in mind, just doing what he felt was right. He ended up with a comfy looking nest of sorts that made his brain happy and made his eyes feel heavy. He felt like he could fall right in and just fall asleep, which was odd because Tommy always had trouble sleeping no matter how exhausted he felt.

Before he could let the sleepy feeling take hold, Tommy pried himself away from his fort, it wasn’t done yet as it was missing a crucial piece. He crawled out from his fort and went back to his desk and grabbed Clementine, then after some careful consideration, he dug around in his desk drawer for the remote to his LED lights. He set them to a dark blue and then turned down the brightness so the whole room was fairly dark, then he crawled back into his fort. Carefully he set Clementine up to the side of the nest type thing he had built for himself and then crawled into the comfortable pile of blankets. It wasn’t long before he fell to sleep.

Having firmly stated his threat to Technoblade, Dream decided it was time to make sure that Tommy would stay as well trained and as dependent on Dream as he was now, even after training with Techno.

“There are some rules surrounding Tommy,” Dream said as the two headed back towards the staircase that led to the upper levels.

“Oh?” Techno raised an eyebrow glancing over at Dream.

“It is important that you follow these rules as Tommy might become very upset or confused otherwise.”

“Well we wouldn’t want that”

“No.” Dream said turning slightly so he was looking Technoblade in the eyes through the holes in the porcelain mask “we wouldn’t” he waited for Techno to nod before continuing “The first and the most important is that Tommy is only allowed to be on this floor. He is not allowed to go up to the other levels and most importantly, Tommy is not allowed outside of the base at all. If he is not in his room, you need to be with him the entire time.”

Techno nodded, he had been expecting that rule, it was pretty obvious with the amount of locks on Tommy’s door that kept him in the room that Dream didn’t want the child wandering about the place.

“Second,” Dream continued “Tommy is only allowed to ask you questions related to training, if he asks you questions about anything else you are to ignore him. Tommy doesn’t know much about the outside world. I’ve sheltered him from it as much as I could, but he’s a curious little thing and I’ve found that answering Tommy’s questions about the outside world quickly overwhelms the boy and often makes him panic.”

Techno didn’t really believe that, he figured it was more likely that Dream liked controlling what information Tommy had access to, but regardless Techno nodded again.

“And third,” Dream paused right in front of the entrance of the staircase “Tommy’s powers aren’t to be used or discussed in any form. His ability is dangerous and self-destructive and it’s landed him in the med-bay more than once and that was when he used it accidentally. As far as Tommy knows, he doesn’t have a super power and it is very important for his safety that it stays that way.”

Techno nodded again, though he found that his thoughts were less conclusive, unsure if Tommy’s powers were really that level of self-destructive (which was possible, Techno’s met many people whose powers manifested in a way the hurt more than helped) or if Dream simply didn’t want Tommy to know and experiment with his ability. ‘Regardless’ Techno decides ‘best to leave that whole clusterfuck alone until I have a better idea of what’s going on’ and with that Techno follows Dream up the stairs and back to the first level trying to push thoughts of Tommy out of his mind. Afterall, Techno still had a job to do, even if the details had changed a bit.

Chapter End Notes

Thanks so much for reading! As always, if you enjoyed this chapter please feel free to let me know as comments are super motivational! Thanks again for all the support and hey, if you've been enjoying this story so far you should totally check out the other sleepy bois fic I'm working on, it just got updated today! It's a foster au that's been a lot of fun to write so far, if you're here from that fic then uh... you should totally read it again! Until next time <3

Who The Fuck Is Clementine

Chapter Summary

“Oh!” Techno said, surprise evident in his tone as he pulled back out of Tommy’s space.
“You’re part phantom”

Chapter Notes

Hey guys! Another update! Hope you enjoy this chapter, it was a lot of fun to write. Thank you so much for just the amazing amount of support I've been getting on this story so far! I mean it's been 2 days and we're over 200 kudos! That's insane, you guys are killing it! A special thank you to pinkmagnolias, you're comment made my whole night and it's also the reason I'm updating this story for the third day in a row! Alright, enjoy <3

See the end of the chapter for more [notes](#)

Tommy woke up to the sound of his door opening. Quickly he scrambled up, crawling out of his fort and standing to greet his visitor.

“Dream” he said happily wishing he could rush over to hug the other but with the way he had built the fort it was kind of in the way. Maybe this whole fort thing hadn’t been as great of an idea as he thought. Although that was probably Tommy’s fault, he should have assumed Dream would be back today.

“Tommy” Dream sighed as Tommy deflated at his tone, the fort hadn’t been a good idea then “what is all of this? You’ve made a mess of your room”

“I’m- I’m sorry Dream, I was just- I finished all of my puzzles and I just got... bored” Tommy finished lamely looking down at the ground, he could hear the lecture now because really Tommy was much too old to be making forts.

“I mean all things considered, it’s an excellent fort” Technoblade said from behind Dream who turned to frown at him, Tommy hadn’t even noticed the other was inside his room, too worried over the fort he supposed.

The compliment took him off guard “wh... what?”

“Well it is. It’s very well built and between the poor lighting and the entrance only being reachable if you’re already inside the room, tactically speaking it’s very smart and near

impossible to get into without alerting whoever is inside that you're attempting to get into it." Techno said with a shrug as if he usually discussed the tacticality of blanket forts, then again Tommy didn't know the guy, maybe he did.

"Techno please don't encourage him" Dream sighed "alright Tommy, I'll work on getting you some new puzzles to do, maybe a new book since you've been good lately, though with Techno training you I doubt you'll have much time for such childish things"

"Thank you," Tommy replied automatically to which Dream just nodded and turned to Techno.

"Well he's all yours, I'll be back in like 3 hours." he said before leaving Tommy alone with this strange guy he knew absolutely nothing about. Great.

Techno seemed about as thrilled as Tommy was which seemed like a great sign already!

"Uh," Techno said as he approached the edge of Tommy's fort "I hate to take down your defenses but think you could make me a temporary entrance... and maybe turn on some brighter lights?"

Tommy scowled but grabbed the remote pointing it at the lights and returning them to their normal color and brightness. He squinted a bit as his eyes adjusted then he went over to the chair and grabbed the fitted sheet "I'll just take the stupid thing down, it's no big deal. Dream was right, I just made a mess."

"Well I think I was more right" Techno argued "it's a cool fort, seems a damn shame to take it down now. Besides, I want an inside tour."

"... you're a weird one" Tommy decided "but whatever, you're the boss" and then crawled back inside the fort. A moment later he was lifting the edges of one of the blanket walls and flipping it over the fitted sheet to create a new entrance.

Techno hesitated for a moment then crawled in, ducking down more than Tommy did to make sure his head didn't hit the ceiling of the fort. Tommy watched as the weirdo looked around his fort.

"As expected, you're a tactical genius you made your uh... nest? Right smack in the middle of the fort, the most difficult place to attack." Techno nodded as if this was an easy and logical conclusion.

Tommy just snorted, rolled his eyes and went back to his nest, grabbing Clementine and settling the plant comfortably in his lap.

Techno's eyes narrowed at the action, he tilted his head to the side "is... is that a plant?"

Tommy gasped and placed his hands on the side of Clementine's pot as if trying to block out the blasphemy that Techno had just spewed "this, you ignorant fuck, is Clementine"

"Right" Techno nodded, deciding to just drop the subject, "of course my bad, sorry... Clementine" he apologized awkwardly to the potted plant.

“You should be sorry”

“Um... okay, what kind of plant is um Clementine?”

“Wow...”

“What? What did I say this time?”

“That is such a rude question Technoblade, I mean really, do you go up to random people on the street and ask if they’re hybrid or human too?”

“Not usually-”

“Exactly-”

“Because normally it’s pretty easy to tell, if you just look for the right stuff, like you’re part avian, right?”

Tommy paused at that “what?”

“You’re part avian” Techno said with a nod, “It’s pretty obvious, you have the feathers and stuff, right behind your ear and there are a few in your hair. Part avian and part something else”

“Yeah part human, like Dream”

“No... that’s not it”

“What the fuck do you mean that’s not it”

“Smile for me?”

“No?”

“C’mon I need to know what abilities we’re working with if I’m going to train you properly”

“Easy” Tommy said with a shrug “I have none, didn’t Dream tell you that already”

Techno frowned “Dream said you have no powers, but all hybrids have abilities connected to whatever it is they’re mixed with. Powers are more of a lottery ticket type deal, not everyone wins and not everyone gets a great one but as far as we’re aware, it’s completely random. No genetics involved what-so-ever.”

“Oh”

“Yeah so smile? Please?”

Tommy told himself he only smiled because Techno asked nicely, not at all because he was curious. Nope, not curious at all. Techno leaned in a bit closer and examined Tommy’s teeth, which was a little weird but whatever.

“Oh!” Techno said, surprise evident in his tone as he pulled back out of Tommy’s space.
“You’re part phantom”

Techno thought he knew what he was doing.

Okay, that was a lie. Techno’s never been great with children, they were too loud and too messy and far too... much for Techno. Personally, Techno would rather deal with a burning building than deal with a crying child, that was Phil’s job, Phil and Wilbur handled the whole child in trouble thing Techno handled the whole life threatening incident thing. That’s how they work, and it’s always worked well! Phil and Wilbur were good with people and Techno, Techno was good at saving them. But now, sitting in a blanket fort, across from a clearly traumatized boy who reminded him scarily too much of Wilbur, he kind of wished he had gotten more practice with talking to kids. Maybe if he had, he’d be a bit more prepared for the new goal he was about to undertake.

Tommy was frowning at the new revelation that he was not in fact, half-human half-avian like he had clearly been told but was rather half-avian and half-phantom.

“But that doesn’t make any sense,” he said, holding the plant closer to his chest. “How can I be half-phantom and half-avian if Dream’s my brother and he’s human?”

“Uh...” Techno didn’t have an answer to that question. He hadn’t really thought about that. But now that that fact was staring him in the face he realized exactly what that then implied about Dream’s real relationship to Tommy. Most concerningly, if Dream didn’t actually have a biological brother... where the fuck did Tommy come from? Techno wouldn’t necessarily put it past Dream to steal a kid but it was pretty obvious this kid’s been around for a bit and while Dream was a big shot villain now, he hadn’t been 3 years ago, hadn’t even been a dot on the map yet. “Well Dream’s been taking care of you your whole life right?”

Tommy nodded and started... was he.... Was he petting the potted plant?

“Um...” Techo paused, distracted by the weird action before jumping back into doing something that was killing him inside, covering up for Dream. “Well ya know, families aren’t always related by blood, so it doesn’t matter if Dream is human and you’re not, if he feels like family than he’s family” he looked up slightly and felt a bit sick to see Tommy nodding along as he talked, this was so much worse than torturing some random dude during his initiation, so so much worse. “And ya know it seems to me like Dream sees you as his younger brother so yeah you... you might not be human but you’re still Dream’s younger brother.” he finished lamely. If Techno thought he could have just shrugged off the question without putting his mission at risk he would have. Techno desperately wished he could have, could have encouraged those questions. Maybe if he had, Tommy would take a closer look at what Dream was doing to him and...

Well...

Honestly, Techno had a feeling that if Dream thought his control over Tommy was slipping he wouldn’t hesitate to resort to some very painful and likely violent actions against the boy.

So maybe covering it up was what was best for now, for both Tommy and his mission.

“Anyway” Techno cleared his throat glancing around the fort awkwardly trying to find a new topic, hopefully one that wouldn’t lead to him having to manipulate a child.

“So, what are my abilities then, big man?” Tommy asked, right, that was the original plot of the story before it took that depressing turn.

“Well,” Techno paused as he thought of what exactly he knew about that particular combination and what he could tell from the traits Tommy was presenting “Avians are usually a good bit faster than pretty much any other hybrid type, they also usually have small wings that are good for gliding-” at the mention of the wings Tommy unfolded his own “yeah those are the ones. Phantoms on the other hand, can turn completely invisible, they usually have longer nails, more like talons if anything, sharper teeth and a few of them can go completely intangible but that’s pretty rare. From what I can tell, you’re leaning more towards your avian side, so you definitely got the gliding bit. Not sure about the speed part, we can test it in the training room in a bit. You definitely got the phantom teeth, and your skin is a little more translucent than most peoples. Not noticeably but...” Techno trailed off for a moment as he realized it was very possible that the reason for that might not be because Tommy is a phantom and more to do with the fact that the child never sees the light of day “um anyway, so yeah I think it’s probably pretty unlikely that you have phantom abilities as well but we can test it once we get you a bit healthier.”

“Hey” Tommy said frowning at Techno “I’m healthy, I’m plenty healthy”

Techno frowned right back “how old are you again?”

“Sixteen”

Techno raised an eyebrow skeptically.

“Ok ok fourteen same thing really”

“Its... really not,” Techno sighed “Tommy imma be honest, you look like you couldn’t be older than twelve and weigh about as much as the average ten year old. Thats... that’s not healthy”

“Well why do I have to wait to be healthy anyway?”

Techno sighed again, he felt like he was going to be doing that a lot when he was around Tommy “because using or trying to trigger latent phantom abilities when you aren’t used to it is extremely exhausting even for a healthy person. You, gremlin, would likely pass out five minutes into your first attempt at triggering them. So we will wait.”

“How do you know all of this shit anyway? You some kinda hybrid expert?”

“Well for starters, I am one-”

“You are?”

“Yeah, I’m a piglin hybrid”

“And what can they do?” Tommy asked, sitting up a bit straighter than he had been as he finally stopped petting the plant.

“Uh well I’m fire resistant-”

“So I could like push you into lava and you wouldn’t die?”

“No. I’m fire resistant not fireproof-”

“Laaaammee”

“Do you wanna know what I can do or not?” Techno asked starting to feel frustration building, when Tommy stayed silent he nodded and took that as an answer “ok so I’m fire resistant, I have a second form I can shift into-”

“You have a second form?” Tommy interrupted and Techno sighed again, trying to gather what remained of his patience.

“Yes, it makes me look more like a piglin and it enhances my strength and speed” Techno answered after taking a few deep breaths.

“Thats fuckin cool”

“It is pretty cool” Techno said with a nod hoping that would end the conversation. It did not.

“So the reason you know so much about hybrids is because you are one?”

“Eh partially, it’s also because my dad and my brother are also hybrids”

“Are they piglins too?”

Techno shook his head “nope, my dad is an elytrian and my brother is just like you actually, part avian part phantom. Although with his case he’s got mainly phantom traits”

“So then your family, is... it’s like how Dream and I are a family”

Aaanndd Techno felt nauseous again, he could do a lot but saying that what Dream was doing to this kid was comparable to the relationships he had with Phil and Wilbur crossed a line that Techno wasn’t able to even look at much less cross. “No.” he answered “no it’s... it’s very different, my family.”

Perhaps Techno had answered a little too quickly or a little too harshly or maybe Tommy could tell that Techno didn’t want to keep having this particular conversation. Whatever the reason, Tommy didn’t ask anymore questions and Techno felt grateful. And then he felt guilty for feeling grateful.

“Well uh anyway” Techno, master of conversation said “wanna go check out the training room?” and that was probably the best thing to say as Tommy perked right up. Not that

Techno could blame him, the idea of a new room to explore was probably as exciting to this kid as a trip to Disney World would be to any other kid.

With a grin on his face Tommy grabbed the potted plant again “Can Clementine come with?”

And Techno sighed. Again.

Chapter End Notes

Hey guys! Thanks so much for reading this chapter, as always if you enjoyed please feel free to let me know! Comments are super motivational to me and really encourage me to keep this story going. Also, I have a linktree set up that has links to my twitter and the Spotify playlists I have set up for both stories I'm writing <https://linktr.ee/batmansmom> and if that wasn't enough I also just finished setting up a discord server! So here's the link to that <https://discord.gg/9qM4wBPp> feel free to join, please come talk to me I am lonely lol thanks again for reading! Until next time <3

He's a Runner, He's a Track Star

Chapter Summary

Tommy frowned “wouldn’t that just end up flinging me back?”

“Uh it might? I’m hoping it’ll trigger your abilities first try but that is certainly a possibility.” Techno shrugged “look I’ll drag over the mats so you probably wont get hurt if the ability doesn’t activate but I’m like 85% sure it’ll work”

“85? Aren’t you supposed to be like an expert on this stuff?”

Chapter Notes

You ever just, accidentally, write twice as much as you were meant to? That is this chapter for me... enjoy!

See the end of the chapter for more [notes](#)

It’s been two years since Tommy last left his room, and if he was being entirely honest with himself he was more than a bit nervous. The Outside is dangerous afterall, Dream had made sure to drill that lesson into Tommy’s head ages ago. But Tommy was Tommy and he certainly wasn’t going to admit being nervous to Technoblade of all people. So instead he insisted on bringing Clementine with them to the training room, saying it would be good for her to get some exercise as well.

Techno... Techno had given him a weird look for that one, but frankly Tommy couldn’t bring himself to care. If he was going to leave his room, he was at the very least going to bring his only friend out with him. Following after Technoblade, he carried Clementine carefully out of the fort through the entrance they had made for Techno to enter. He stood and shook Clementines pot a bit to even out the dirt inside, once he was satisfied he hugged the pot close to his chest and took a deep breathe trying to prepare himself for the Outside.

“Are... are you okay?” Techno asked looking so terribly awkward that Tommy had to hold back his laughter.

“All good big man” Tommy said “uh lead the way”

Techno nodded and turned back to the door, opening and stepping through it like it was no big deal. Tommy on the other hand let himself take a moment, stopping right before the entrance and holding Clementine a bit closer before finally stepping over the threshold. He

immediately tensed up wondering silently if he should really be doing this. Leaving the room was dangerous, leaving the room upset Dream.

“Is this... is this really ok? You aren’t tricking me are you?” Tommy asked narrowing his eyes at Techno who just scoffed.

“Why would I waste my time doing that? No it’s not a trick.” Techno said rolling his eyes. Tommy noticed that ever since he had asked questions about Techno’s family, Techno had been more snappish, not quite angry but seemingly extremely easy to irritate. Maybe they didn’t have a good relationship? Techno had said that his family wasn’t anything like Tommy’s so that must be it. Tommy made a mental note not to ask about them again.

“C’mon training room is this way” Techno sighed and Tommy made sure to stay close as he started walking, leading the way through the storage room and over to another metal door that looked almost exactly like the one that led to Tommy’s room. Techno pulled out a key and unlocked the door pushing it open and stepping inside, with Tommy following right behind him.

Tommy almost dropped Clementine when he saw how big the room was.

“Holy shit” he whispered to the plant “this place is fuckin huge”

Aaaanndd Techno was giving him weird looks again. Whatever, Tommy didn’t care, Techno seemed like a bitch anyway.

“You can put um... Clementine... down over by the water cooler” Techno said pointing to Tommy’s right.

Tommy sighed a bit but did as instructed and set the plant down gently and then returned to Techno.

“Right, what’s first on the agenda then big man?”

“Well I was thinking we’d start with seeing how fast you can run” Techno said leading Tommy over to a weird black plastic-looking thing with what looked like rubber? Maybe? Wrapped around the bottom “avian abilities take up less energy than phantom ones do, so as long as you’ve eaten recently we should be able to test them no problem”

Tommy nodded deciding not to mention that the last time he had eaten was first meal before Dream had come in to introduce Techno to Tommy. “Right so how do we test it?”

“Using this” Techo said gesturing to the weird plastic and rubber thing “hop on”

“What... what is it?” Tommy asked squinting at the thing feeling slightly uneasy.

Techno was staring at him again.

“It’s um...” Techno paused as if trying to collect his thoughts “it’s a treadmill, do you... have you- do you not know what a treadmill is?”

“No.” Tommy said defensively, crossing his arms and frowning at Techno “am I- am I supposed to?”

“Uh” Techno looked a little lost “no no it’s fine here I’ll uh I’ll show you what it does,” he said getting onto the treadmill. He pressed a button and little orange lights flickered behind what looked like glass. Tommy inched a bit closer to see it better and realized the lights were forming numbers. “So basically if I press this button,” Techno said pressing a big green go button making the plastic thing start to shake. Tommy stepped back as it started making a weird noise and then watched, eyes wide as the weird rubber thing on the bottom started moving. “The track on the bottom will move,” he said as he walked forward. Tommy watched in pure amazement as Techno walked normally without ever moving forward.

“That’s... that’s so fuckin cool!” Tommy said watching as the treadmill continued moving the rubber thing, the track (that’s what Techno had called it) “how does it do that?”

“Well uh I don’t know like the exacts of it,” Techno said “but if you press this button” he gestured to an arrow pointing up and then pressed it a few times “it’ll speed up how fast the track is moving” and true to his word the track started moving a bit faster as Techno started walking at a normal pace. “And then when you’re done you just press the stop button” Techno pressed another button and the track slowed to a stop.

“So,” Techno smiled at him as he stepped off of the treadmill “wanna give it a go?”

The more time Techno spent with Tommy, the more he wished he could call Phil. No one Tommy’s age should be looking at a treadmill with that much amazement, as if it’s the most technologically advanced thing he’s ever seen. It wasn’t even that fancy of a treadmill! In comparison to most treadmills Techno has used in his life, the thing is ancient. There isn’t even an incline button! But Tommy was looking at it like it was the newest smartphone and Techno was doing his best to just play it cool, but he was starting to wonder just how sheltered Tommy was. How much had Dream kept from him about the world outside of his room?

Techno watched as Tommy jumped onto the treadmill with far too much excitement before looking at Technoblade expectantly.

“Um right so just press the green button and the track will start moving again, make sure you walk with the track ok?” he instructed watching as Tommy nodded, hand hesitating over the button. “It’s okay if anything happens or you feel like you can’t keep up you can always press the red button, or I can press it for you.” he tried to reassure the young boy, he wasn’t entirely sure if that’s why Tommy was hesitating but regardless Tommy nodded and finally pressed the button so he was counting that as a win.

Techno made sure they stayed on the slowest pace, for now, letting Tommy get used to the machine before they thought about speeding things up. Tommy didn’t seem to mind, instead, he was looking at the numbers showing on the little screen with curiosity.

“What do these numbers mean?” he asked looking up at Techno.

“Well, this one tells you how fast the track is going” Techno answered pointing at the orange number one on the little screen next to the arrows that controlled the track’s speed, “and these ones tell you how long you’ve been on the machine,” he said pointing at the screen with the stopwatch on it.

Tommy nodded a little and stayed quiet for a moment before shyly asking “and um... how does it do that?”

Techno paused, thinking back to when he first entered Tommy’s room with Dream, how there wasn’t even a clock inside. How he wondered how Tommy kept track of time, if he did at all. Then he realized Tommy was looking at him weirdly so he rushed to answer “well the first numbers are minutes and the second ones are seconds”

Tommy was staring at him blankly, clear confusion on his face.

“Tommy, do you... know what those are?”

His heart dropped when Tommy shook his head but Techno had long ago mastered the art of pretending to be an emotionless bastard. Why couldn’t Phil have taken this mission? Phil would have known what to do here. Phil would have been able to offer Tommy more comfort than Techno and that potted plant Tommy was so attached to combined.

Phil would have taken Tommy and run by now.

Which is probably why he didn’t get the mission and Techno was here instead.

“Okay uh that's okay, if you want I can explain it in a bit? For now, lets just speed it up a little and see how fast you can go” Techno said, procrastinating the problem rather than solving it like the coward he felt like he was.

Luckily Tommy seemed just as eager to move on as he did because the blond boy nodded and immediately reached over and started pressing the button to speed up the track.

“Whoa whoa lets uh let's not get ahead of ourselves here,” Techno said “we’re gonna increase things slowly, don’t want you going too fast and getting hurt” he relaxed a little when Tommy dropped his hand away from the button, jeez this kid was eager to please. “Okay here’s how we’re going to do this” Techno said “when this number hits three” he pointed to the minutes on the stopwatch “you’re going to increase the speed by one, once it hits six you’ll increase the speed again and so on, sound okay?”

Tommy nodded eyes glued to the numbers on the screen, the moment it hits three he reached over and quickly pressed the button then he went back to watching the numbers. This continued until the track was moving fast enough that Tommy was stuck in a weird spot, too fast to walk or jog but too slow to run.

“Alright, let's speed it up a little bit” Techno instructed “bump it up until you're running at a normal pace, don’t push yourself just yet”

Tommy nodded and silently followed Techno's instructions, he had been oddly quiet since the whole not knowing what minutes are thing.

"Ok good, you're doing great, even without drawing on your abilities you're pretty fast" Techno noted pretending not to notice how Tommy lit up at the praise. "What we're going to do now is we're going to try and activate your avian abilities, to do that we're going to have to speed this thing up until it's going too fast for you to keep up with normally"

Tommy frowned "wouldn't that just end up flinging me back?"

"Uh, it might? I'm hoping it'll trigger your abilities first try but that is certainly a possibility." Techno shrugged "look I'll drag over the mats so you probably won't get hurt if the ability doesn't activate but I'm like 85% sure it'll work"

"85? Aren't you supposed to be like an expert on this stuff?"

"Listen I've never had to force activate hybrid abilities before, I'm just doing what-" Techno cut himself off "I'm um just doing what I think will work" he finished with a shrug, the words 'what Phil did with Wilbur' remaining unsaid.

"Okay" Tommy nodded "okay if you think it will work then I trust you"

'Ah fuck' Techno thought to himself as he went to grab the mats 'why'd you have to say that kid now I'm gonna feel bad if this doesn't work'

Soon enough Techno had the mats set up behind the treadmill, maybe this was a bad idea, maybe there was a different way to activate Tommy's hybrid abilities. How else could you activate avian abilities? Maybe he should have stacked the mats up and made Tommy get on top and then push Tommy off. No that... that sounded like a worse idea. Okay treadmill it is!

"Alright," Techno said trying to get his thoughts to just shut up for a second as he walked back over to stand next to the treadmill "whenever you're ready start speeding it up"

Tommy nodded and immediately started spamming the up button reaching a number on the speed setting Techno's never seen before. 'Oh god this isn't going to work is it?' techno thought as the machine sped up moving faster and faster as Tommy kept spamming the up button until the treadmill beeped at him meaning it had reached it's maximum. 'Oh shit wait I should've told him to stop fuck' "uh Tommy-" Techno started and then watched in amazement as Tommy... Tommy was keeping up with the machine, legs moving at an inhuman speed.

Tommy was laughing, loud and boisterous as he ran "I'm fuckin doin it! You seein this shit Techno? I'm fuckin goin fast and shit"

Techno couldn't stop the grin from spreading across his face "that you are, but you aren't used to doing this so let's slow it-" Before he could finish his sentence Tommy suddenly went flying backward into the mat as his abilities deactivated "before that happens" he sighed reaching over and pressing the stop button before walking over to where Tommy was lying on the mats. "You okay?"

“Yep” Tommy groaned “I’m great, big man, that didn’t hurt at all”

“Right, hold on I’ll get you some water” Techno laughed, shaking his head as he walked over to the water cooler and grabbed a paper cup from the top of it. He poured the water into the cup and walked back over to Tommy who hadn’t moved from his spot. He handed the cup to Tommy before sitting down next to him “that was really great, good job kid”

Tommy again lit up at the praise, sitting up slightly so he could drink his water. He downed the cup quickly, then just sat and tried to catch his breath. “Okay,” he said after a minute “what next?”

“Well,” Techno thought about that for a moment “we could test out those wings of yours, I don’t know how strong they are though so we do run the danger of you falling instead of floating”

Tommy grinned “what's the percentage that I fall?”

“Uh... like 90ish I’d say” Techno answered.

“Sounds like fine odds to me”

“If you get hurt it’s not my fault”

Tommy laughed and Techno found himself smiling at the look of pure joy on Tommy’s face.

“So how are we testing the wings?”

“Uh that depends, how well can you climb?”

As it turned out, Tommy was absolutely shit at climbing. The blond glared angrily at what Techno had called the rock wall, he hadn’t managed to even make it 3 feet off the ground before he had to drop back down. “This is shitty” he declared “isn’t there a different way to do this?”

“Uh I mean I could probably climb up there with you on my back” Techno said and Tommy couldn’t really tell if he was joking or not. That was one thing that still frustrated Tommy about Techno, it was hard to tell what the guy was thinking, unlike with Dream who seemed so easy to read and understand in comparison.

Tommy decided that regardless of whether it was meant to be a joke or not, it sounded like a great idea. “Alright sounds good big man, can you crouch down a bit?”

Techno opened his mouth as if to argue, so likely the suggestion had been a joke. But rather than tell Tommy that Techno just sighed and crouched down. Tommy grinned and jumped on Techno’s back, wrapping his arms around the other’s neck.

“Tommy you’re choking me” Techno said as he stood straight up and Tommy adjusted so he was pulling himself up more. “Alright, you’re going to have to hold on tight, and wrap your

legs around like this... yep just like that, because I need to use my arms. Okay, you ready?"

"Yep! Onwards Blade"

Techno sighed but regardless the piglin hybrid started climbing up the rock wall. Once they were near the top, he stopped "okay what you're gonna do now is reach out and grab the nearest handhold and we're going to transfer you over to the wall"

"This... this feels like a bad idea," Tommy said clinging a bit tighter to Techno, he wasn't scared! Of course, he wasn't but... they were really high up... and Tommy really didn't want to fall.

"Are you chickening out?" Techno asked his tone teasing.

"Of- of fucking course not" Tommy protested "I just- I just don't wanna fuckin fall"

"I won't let you fall" Techno soothed, "I've got you, you won't fall until you're ready"

"Promise?"

"Yeah kid I promise, now grab that hand hold"

Tommy hesitated but he had trusted Techno this far so he reached over, one arm still clinging to Techno the other grabbing the suggested handhold.

"Yep just like that, now take your foot and put it down on the rock there"

Tommy unwrapped one of his legs and placed it hesitantly down on the foothold.

"Okay good, you're doing great now put your weight down on that foot"

Tommy hesitated but did as instructed.

"Alright now you're going to move your other arm over to that same handhold, yep just like that, you're doing great and now you're other leg, and look at that you did it!"

Tommy clung tightly to the rock wall, the only thing holding him there was his own strength... and well that wasn't exactly comforting. He had felt better when Techno had been the one doing it and Techno had been holding both of them up.

"Alright now what we're going to do is your going to spread your wings out as far as you can and then you're going to jump off"

"Right right okay yep totally big man um... what do I do if I don't glide or float or whatever the fuck I'm supposed to do"

"Uh aim for the mats?"

"The mats we left by the treadmill?"

“Uh... fuck I forgot to move them okay just hold on okay? I’m gonna climb down and move them”

“Fuckin- okay just please hurry I don’t know if you’ve noticed Technoblade but I’m not exactly the strongest guy out there. I might be the biggest man, but uh”

“I know I know, it’s okay, I’ll be quick” Techno promised as he scaled his way down the wall much quicker than he had when climbing up with Tommy. When he got close enough he jumped from the wall and landed safely on the ground, knees bent to absorb the shock. Tommy watched as he ran over to the mats and started dragging them back over to the wall.

“Techno hurry!” Tommy shouted as his arms started shaking from the strain.

Techno looked up at Tommy and Tommy could have sworn the piglin hybrid looked concerned but it was hard to tell from so far away. Techno did seem to be moving faster after he said that and just as Tommy felt like his arms were going to give out, Techno had safely stacked the mats up to catch Tommy if he fell.

“All right, you’re good! Now jump!”

Tommy shut his eyes and stretched his wings as far as he could and then he kicked off of the wall twisting his body so he was falling forwards instead of backwards. The first thing he noticed was how much the strain on his wings hurt. The second thing he noticed was that he was not plummeting to his death. Hesitantly he opened his eyes to find that he was gliding through the air!

Below him, Techno was grinning “good job! Aim for the mats kid!”

“How do I do that?” Tommy asked trying to focus on keeping his wings spread even though the muscles were starting to burn in pain.

“Uh... just um... “ Techno looked a bit lost on how to direct Tommy on this part, which wasn’t the most comforting.

“Technoooo” Tommy said as he started approaching the other end of the training room, the wall coming closer at far too fast of a pace than what he was comfortable with “Techno how do I turn?”

“Ummm try leaning?” Techno shouted up to him as he ran after Tommy. Tommy followed his advice and leaned to the left, angling his wings to follow he made a sharp turn that made his stomach do flips. He was going to right way now, towards where the mats were but still too high to... to what? What was Tommy meant to do?

“Techno!”

“Yeah?”

“How am I supposed to land?”

“Uh... we’ll figure that bit out later try crashing into the mats!”

“You fucker why did you let me do this?”

“Hey, I warned you there was like a 90% chance of you just falling and you still decided you wanted to do this. I don’t see how this is my fault.”

“You- you uh you enabled me”

“Just focus on hitting the mats! You can argue with me after!”

Tommy sighed wincing as the muscles in his wings spasmed, his stomach dropped as he started to fall before forcing his wings back open. That’s when it came to him, wow Tommy was a genius. He knew exactly how to get down to the mats! Tommy smiled and folded his wings back in again letting himself fall. Below him, he heard Techno’s startled shouting but he couldn’t make out what he was saying, he had more important things to focus on. Once he was closer to the height the mats were at he snapped his wings back open wincing at the pain that shot threw them and letting them slam him right into the pile of mats.

“Ow” he mumbled from underneath the toppled pile of mats.

Techno was already there lifting and throwing the mats off of him.

“Tommy what the hell was that,” Techno said as he tossed the last mat aside.

“That, blade, was fuckin awesome” Tommy said with a grin.

“That was reckless and stupid” Techno sighed but Tommy was pretty sure the other wasn’t actually angry with him, he didn’t have any of the signs that Dream showed when he was. “You are literally grounded until further notice”

“What? C’mon, how am I supposed to get the hang of it if I don’t keep doing it!”

“You can get the hang of it later, once I know more about what I’m doing. We can focus on your running and strength training until then”

Tommy perked up at the mention of running, that had been a lot more fun than gliding. Sure his legs were still aching but it hadn’t hurt nearly as bad as his wings had. “Okay fine” he relented “when are you gonna start training me to fight and shit?”

“once we’ve got a handle on your abilities,” Techno said with a nod “it’s important to learn how to fight with and without them, but regardless of whether you’re using them or not, once you have more control you’ll likely be naturally stronger and faster than you are now. So we’ll wait until that happens.”

Tommy nodded a little already feeling excited about the prospect of learning to fight, so he could finally be useful to Dream.

Techno sighed again “i hate to say this but we should probably return you to your room, Dream should be back soon”

Tommy couldn't help the feeling of disappointment that flooded through him, he had hoped this could last for just a bit longer, but Techno was probably right and Tommy didn't want to make Dream mad. "Okay, let me go grab Clementine," he said as he stood up. He walked over to the water cooler, gently he picked up Clementine's pot before returning to where Technoblade was waiting for him.

"Ready?" Techno asked

Tommy sighed looking around the training room one more time, putting off having to return for just a little longer before nodding "yeah"

Techno led them out of the training room and Tommy followed closely behind him, he could have sworn Techno was walking slower than he had on the way to the training room but Tommy was probably imagining it.

When they got back to Tommy's room, Techno helped him dismantle the blanket fort and put everything away before Dream got back. When Dream walked in, Tommy was showing Techno his small collection of books. Much to Tommy's disappointment, Dream didn't stay for very long, claiming he was busy planning something important with Sapnap. Once he and Techno left, Tommy stood and grabbed Clementine from her usual spot before sitting down on his bed and hugging the plant close to his chest.

"You know Clem? Techno's really not that bad" Tommy told her quietly "don't tell him I said that though, can't have him getting a bigger ego."

Clementine as usual didn't respond.

Chapter End Notes

Hey guys! Thanks so much for reading this chapter, as always if you enjoyed please feel free to let me know! Comments are super motivational to me and really encourage me to keep this story going. Also thank you so much for over 300 kudos! Seriously you guys are insaaaane. Also, I have a linktree set up that has links to my twitter and the Spotify playlists I have set up for both stories I'm writing <https://linktr.ee/batmansmom> and if that wasn't enough I also just finished setting up a discord server! So here's the link to that <https://discord.gg/9qM4wBPp> feel free to join, thanks again for reading! Until next time <3

The Clocks Ticking

Chapter Summary

Techno didn't hesitate in his answer "I think they'd love you" he said knowing it was true.

"Really?"

Techno's hated how desperate Tommy sounded, as if the idea that someone could love him was some impossible dream "Really."

Chapter Notes

Hey guys! Thanks so much for the support on the last chapter, seriously you guys make me just want to keep writing and never stop! We're back to our normal word count for this chapter but if we hit 500 kudos I might do another long chapter tomorrow. Who knows! Anyway, enjoy this chapter <3

See the end of the chapter for more [notes](#)

Tommy and Techno quickly fell into a routine, Techno would come down to see Tommy every other day and would stay for about three hours. For the first week, Dream walked him down and then would come in at the end of the three hours to drag him back upstairs for some plan Tommy wasn't allowed to know about. Two of the three hours Techno had with him, were spent training, but the hour before quickly became Tommy's favorite part of the day because Techno would just sit with him and do something Dream never did. Answer his questions!

"I've always wondered what trees are like," Tommy said during one of these hours "because look-" he grabbed 'The World Encyclopedia of Trees' and flipped it open to one of his favorites, the oak tree "this one right, the bark bit looks all lumpy and squiggly but this one" he flipped it back to another page he had dog eared, the one on Aspen Trees "this one is all smooth and shit"

Techno nodded "yeah so most trees end up having bark like the oak tree, it's very rough and those are usually the best trees for climbing, but all younger trees start out with smooth bark like the aspen tree has"

"You climb trees?" Tommy asked frowning a bit, climbing rocks he could understand but trees were living things just like Tommy and he wouldn't like it very much if someone tried

to climb him.

Techno chuckled “I used to when I was younger. A lot of kids climb trees, don’t worry the trees don’t mind much”

“If you say so,” Tommy said doubtfully.

The next time Techno came to visit him, Techno brought a gift. Once Dream had left the room, Techno pulled out a piece of bark from his pocket. On one edge it was smooth but the others were rough and jagged, clearly cut off of the tree using something that didn’t cut through trees very well. Tommy looked at it curiously but hesitated in taking it.

“Don’t worry” Techno told him as if sensing the reason for his hesitation “I took it from a stump, the tree had already fallen”

“Dream wouldn’t like me having something from the Outside” Tommy mumbled as he took to piece of bark from Techno, running his hand over the rough texture and letting himself trace the divots in the bark.

“What Dream doesn’t know won’t kill him,” Techno said and Tommy grinned even though his heart raced at the idea of hiding something from Dream.

“I really shouldn’t” he argued even though he gripped the piece of bark tighter.

Techno just shook his head “c’mon, I’ll help you find a place to hide it”

So the piece of bark stayed, hidden between the books on the shelf.

From then on, Techno kept sneaking him little gifts, little pieces from the Outside. A flower, that Tommy pressed between the pages of ‘Flowerpaedia’, a smooth rock that Tommy kept in one of the puzzle boxes. It made Tommy’s heart race whenever Dream entered the room, knowing he had these illegal things from the Outside, things Dream claimed were too dangerous to expose Tommy to outside of pictures and books.

After the second week of walking Techno down, Dream decided that Techno could be trusted to make his way there alone. On his second visit without Dream walking him, Techno brought Tommy something completely new. Nothing he had ever seen or read about.

“This,” Techno said as he handed the plate-like thing to Tommy “is a clock, it’s how most people keep track of time”

“Ok... why are you giving me this?” Tommy asked with a frown “I have my own way of keeping track of time, why would I need another one?” Then he tensed up realizing his mistake, he held onto the clock just a little tighter, waiting for Techno to take it away.

“Well, for one thing, I promised I’d explain minutes and seconds to you” Techno answered, “just until now I didn’t feel like I had the right tools to explain it properly. For another, I think

you'll probably be pretty interested in it once I explain it. Whether you use it or not is up to you I guess."

Tommy nodded a little relaxing his grip on the clock when it wasn't ripped away, trying to hide his confusion at Techno's response. Techno was so... different... from Dream. When Dream gave him a gift, he was supposed to be grateful and not ask questions, Dream said that when he asked questions about things given to him he sounded ungrateful and was undeserving of the gift. Several of Tommy's books had had pages ripped from them because Tommy had asked a question about a word he didn't know or a sentence that had confused him. Tommy learned pretty quickly that asking questions got him nowhere.

But it was different with Techno, he always did his best to answer Tommy's questions no matter how many there were. When training, if Tommy didn't understand something, Techno took the time to explain it in a way he did understand. Techno was patient, Techno set aside time to answer Tommy's questions, Techno kept his promises, Techno didn't snap or yell or call Tommy names when he did something wrong. Techno was the complete opposite of Dream, Techno was confusing.

Techno was his friend.

But if this is what a friend was, then what was Dream? Was this the difference between friends and family? 'Maybe' Tommy thought to himself 'the difference is that Dream is honest about what he thinks of me and families always tell each other the truth and because Techno is just my friend, he can't be honest. Maybe he's just as annoyed with me as Dream is when I ask questions'

"Tommy? You alright?" Techno was giving him a funny look again.

"I'm alright big man," Tommy sighed looking down at the clock "so, tell me about these minute things"

The next time Techno came to visit him, Tommy did his best not to ask any questions during the conversation. He laughed and joked and responded, but never once did he interrupt to ask a question. Not even when Techno mentioned things that usually made him ask so many questions his head was spinning by the end of the hour with all the new information he had learned. They were lying next to each other on his bedroom floor when Techno said something.

"You're quiet today" Techno commented, about 30 minutes into the visit.

"Just figured you'd probably want a break from all the questions" Tommy shrugged "I'm sure it's annoying explaining all of these things that I should really already know"

"I don't mind if you ask questions, Tommy," Techno said suddenly sounding a lot more serious than he had before.

But Tommy still frowned a bit “you don’t have to lie about it, Dream hates it when I ask questions”

“Tommy” Techno sighed “listen, I’m not lying, I don’t care, you can ask your questions I’m fine with it I promise”

Tommy hesitated but Techno had promised, and Techno always kept his promises “can I... can I ask questions about you?” he asked quietly.

Techno paused and for a moment Tommy was worried he had crossed a line but then Techno just shrugged “sure go for it,”

Tommy took a deep breath, “what’s your family like?” he asked, voice oddly soft as he tensed waiting for Techno to get angry. He had avoided the topic ever since that first day alone with Techno. But Techno didn’t look angry, he just looked... thoughtful, the way he did when he was trying to figure out the best way to answer one of Tommy’s questions.

“Well,” Techno began “to start I have a dad and a brother, my dad is... the kindest person I’ve ever known. He just has this like aura around him, I think that honestly, the world could be ending and as long as he was still around I’d still believe that maybe everything would turn out okay. Then there’s my older brother, and he is usually the opposite of comforting” Techno said with a laugh “he’s smart but he’s stubborn, there’s no use arguing with Wilbur about anything because he’ll never admit you’re right even when it’s so exceptionally obvious that he’s wrong. He’s- the best way to describe him is that he’s the kind of person to dig himself into a hole and upon realizing, decides to keep digging down because who knows maybe there’s buried treasure somewhere in the dirt. Then he somehow convinces you to jump down and dig with him while you’re trying to convince him to let you pull him up.”

Tommy shifted a bit closer to Techno as he listened, silently trying to compare Techno’s family to his own but the attempt only makes him feel more confused because Dream doesn’t sound like any of that.

“You remind me of him”

Tommy looked up at that, turning slightly to face Techno “I... I remind you of your brother?”

Techno wasn’t looking at him but Tommy still saw it when he nodded, “you do, you can be stubborn too and I think you’re probably the smartest 14-year-old I’ve ever met... not that I know many 14-year-olds.”

“How could I possibly be the smartest 14-year-old you know? A few days ago I didn’t even know what a clock was” Tommy scoffed.

“That’s not your fault,” Techno argued “besides, the things you do know about, you know a lot about. Way more than anyone else I’ve ever met, regardless of age”

“I barely know anything, If I knew a lot I wouldn’t have as nearly many questions” Tommy retorted “or be nearly as confused as I feel most of the time”

“Tommy, what's the scientific name for an oak tree”

“What?”

“Just answer the question”

“Quercus”

“And the one for dandelions?”

“I still don’t see what this has to do with anything”

“Just... humor me”

“Taraxacum”

“And what family do they belong to?”

“Uh... Asteraceae I’m pretty sure”

“And how many species of mushrooms are edible?”

“Like 50,000 probably more?”

“Tommy”

“Technoblade”

“Tommy I’m 6 years older than you are, I know about clocks and treadmills and I couldn’t have told you half of what you told me.”

“Okay but you still are able to answer all of my questions! You’re way smarter than I am”

“And you just answered all of mine, I’d say that makes you pretty smart too.”

Tommy paused and thought about that for a minute, hating that it made sense. But Tommy was Tommy and he wasn’t going to admit Techno was right, even if he had to fight the smile that wanted to spread on his face at the thought that Techno was right about him. That Tommy really was smart. So instead he just shook his head “and you say I’m stubborn”

“Child” Techno sighed.

“Prick” Tommy retorted.

But both of them were smiling.

Techno decided that they weren’t going to go train today, instead, he told Tommy to keep asking him questions, all the questions Tommy could think of. Most of them, Techno found out quickly, were about him.

“Favorite tree?”

“Uh evergreens are pretty cool” Techno shrugged snickering a little when he heard Tommy sigh.

“Okay but what type of evergreen?” he asked “there's like 630 of them to pick from”

“Uh, spruce trees?” Techno tried looking over at Tommy who just sighed again.

“Alright moving on, I’m not asking you about plants ever again” the blond decided as Techno burst out laughing. “Stop it, okay next question uh... what’s your favorite animal?”

“Polar bears are neat” Techno answered, “how about you?”

“cows seem pretty cool” Tommy answered with a shrug “i don’t really know that many animals, why is your hair pink?”

Techno started laughing again not bothered to get himself to stop even as Tommy started hitting his arm.

“It was a serious question!” Tommy said face going red.

“I’m sorry, I’m sorry it’s just the way you said it” Techno chuckled “I don’t like dye it or anything, it just grows that color”

“Do you think your family would like me?” Tommy asked after a brief moment of silence, Techno realized he was probably gathering the courage to ask that question based on the way Tommy immediately tensed after as if waiting for a negative reaction.

Techno didn’t hesitate in his answer “I think they’d love you” he said knowing it was true.

“Really?”

Techno’s hated how desperate Tommy sounded, as if the idea that someone could love him was some impossible dream “Really.”

“Do you miss them?”

“Everyday” Techno said and the two fell into a comfortable silence once again

"Techno?"

"Yeah, Tommy?"

"What does the sky look like?"

Techno paused, the question, like most of Tommy's questions made his heartache for reasons he didn't understand.

"I'll show it to you one day" he doesn't know why he says that, he knows by now not to make promises he doesn't know he can keep. And if Techno was being honest with himself, he

didn't know if he could ever get Tommy safely out of this building. Maybe if he found the information he needed, maybe if they managed to take down Dream, maybe if Tommy didn't end up getting caught in the crossfire. But that was a lot of maybes and Techno didn't think he was lucky enough for all of them to go his way.

"Really?"

"I promise" and he swears to himself he'll find a way.

Chapter End Notes

Hey guys! Thanks so much for reading this chapter, as always if you enjoyed please feel free to let me know! Comments are super motivational to me and really encourage me to keep this story going. Also thank you so much for over 400 Kudos! Lets keep it going! Also, I have a linktree set up that has links to my twitter and the Spotify playlists I have set up for both stories I'm writing <https://linktr.ee/batmansmom> and if that wasn't enough I also have a discord server! I'm planning on posting some cannon facts about the characters and the universe there that likely won't show up in this story on there! It's also meant to be a place for artists, writers, editors and readers to all come together to enjoy Dream SMP/SBI content together! So here's the link to that <https://discord.gg/9qM4wBPp> feel free to join, thanks again for reading! Until next time <3

Lesson Learned

Chapter Summary

“There’s something weird on your neck,” Techno told the blond after a moment “a smiley face, do you know how you got it?”

Tommy shook his head “I don’t really know, Sapnap and George have them too” he shrugged “I think everyone has at least one, except for Dream, that’s why he put it on his mask”

“Huh” Techno hummed trying to ignore the bad feeling he got in his chest looking at the mark “weird”

Chapter Notes

eyes major character death tag suspiciously ahaha anyway warnings for Dream being an abusive bitch and mentions of blood...enjoy this super long chapter!

See the end of the chapter for more [notes](#)

Tommy and Techno had been training together now for a little over a month. In that month Tommy has learned more about the outside world than he has in the last 10 years. Techno tried to bring him a few pieces from the outside world every week, mostly it was flowers or leaves but every once in a while Techno would bring Tommy something completely new. After the clock, it was a map of the headquarters that Tommy has lived in his whole life.

“I figured that maybe you’d like to know more about what’s directly above you” Techno explained as he spread out the map “it was pretty difficult to find a full blueprint of the building but I think this covers everything”

Tommy glanced over at the map, he could see why Techno had called it a blueprint seeing as the whole thing had been printed in blue and white, but really it was just a less colorful map. So Tommy overlooked the stupid name. He paused though when he realized something was missing from the blueprint.

“My classroom isn’t on there” Tommy interrupted Techno, who had been in the middle of explaining what the med-bay looked like.

“Your... classroom?” Techno asked confused “you mean like the training room because it’s right there,” Techno said pointing at it on the map,

“No no my classroom,” Tommy said “where Dream brings me whenever we have an important lesson to go over, it should be down here somewhere,” he explained pointing at the empty area below the storage level.

“Huh” Techno mumbled “Dream never told me about anything being beyond the storage level” he paused, seeming lost in thought.

Tommy frowned. “It’s not really that important, it’s just a classroom, and I’m the only student so it’s not really very big. I guess it’s not really that big of a surprise that it wouldn’t be on the map”

“Blueprint” Techno corrected.

“Map”

“Blueprint”

“It’s just a BLUE MAP Technoblade! It doesn’t need a fancy name!”

A month and a half into training and Tommy had almost full mastery of running using his avian ability. He could run using it through the whole two-hour mark at this point and while Tommy wanted to see if he could go even longer, he also didn’t want to cut into the hour he got to talk with Techno. So instead they turned their focus to Tommy learning how to fully use his wings. At least at this point, they had gotten a better system set up than climbing that stupid Rockwall. Apparently, Technoblade had requested a few platforms to be built that were high enough for Tommy to jump from to practice gliding and strengthening his wings. While they were being installed, Techno had Tommy run around in the storage room under the pretense of seeing how well Tommy could navigate around objects while going the speeds he was going.

Or at least, Tommy thought it was a pretense, then again this was Technoblade he was talking about so really who knows.

“Alright Tommy, can I see your wings?” Techno asked as they sat underneath one of the platforms.

Tommy unfolded his wings letting them rest naturally, sighing in relief as sore muscles were finally allowed to relax. Tommy wished he could always keep his wings out like this, but Dream didn’t like it much. He only was supposed to have them out when Dream was helping him preen. But Techno for whatever reason always seemed like the exception to Dream’s rules. With Techno around he could ask questions and leave his room and keep secrets from Dream and talk about whatever he wanted to talk about.

Techno made a pained noise from behind him and Tommy frowned, furrowing his brows as he turned to look back at the piglin hybrid “Something wrong?”

“Tommy,” Techno said in a tone that Tommy had come to learn meant the other was being very serious “how long has it been since you preened your wings”

“Uh...” Tommy thought about that for a moment, technically speaking he wasn’t supposed to preen his wings unless Dream was there, but two weeks ago the pain in them had been so intense he had disobeyed that rule and had preened what he could reach. “Like two weeks ago?”

Techno made another pained noise “um right... well do you uh mind if I-” he cut himself off but Tommy could feel his hand hovering over the bright red feathers.

Tommy sighed, wings drooping a little as he looked down at the ground and took a deep breath “uh yeah I guess” he said and then he tensed waiting for the hand to start tugging and pulling out feathers the way Dream did.

Instead, he felt Techno gently run a hand through his feathers, brushing off bits of dust and dirt, fixing them so they were aligned properly. The only feathers that came out were the ones that were already loose, and there was no pain when Techno pulled those, only relief. As it continued, Tommy felt himself melt into the gentle touch as all of his bones suddenly turned into jello. Techno huffed in a way Tommy knew meant he was amused but continued fixing Tommy’s feather’s regardless. Even when there were no more feathers to realign or to pull, Techno kept repeating the movement, letting Tommy lean against him as the blond tried to muffle little chirps that were trying to force their way out. Dream didn’t like when Tommy chirped, he had always said it made Tommy sound even needier and more annoying than he already did. Luckily Techno didn’t seem to notice this dilemma as he just kept running his fingers through Tommy’s wings.

“Alright,” Techno said finally pulling his hand away “c’mon we have a new platform to test out”

Tommy stood a bit reluctantly but regardless he followed Techno over to the ladder that led up to the first platform. Tommy climbed up the ladder with Techno right behind him, until they finally were on the platform. This one was the highest up of the ones that were installed, going even higher than the rock wall. A month ago, Tommy would have been scared at the thought of jumping off of it. Tommy knew better now, he was an avian after all, he had no reason to fear heights.

“Right,” Techno said, “what we’re aiming for you to do is to glide from this platform to that platform” he pointed to one slightly lower than the one they were on that was on the other side of the room “then to the next platform and eventually down to the ground. Before leaving each platform you should take a running start, get as much speed as you can. There is cushioning on the walls behind the platform if you aren’t able to slow yourself down but try to land on your feet and not on your face” Techno snickered

“I resent that, it was one time”

“One time and you weren’t even using your wings. You were just practicing theoretical landing by jumping off of the rock wall... and you were only like 5 feet off the ground”

“Oh shut up Technoblade,” Tommy said as he backed up to where the platform met the wall “am I doing this or not?”

“If you are then do it already,” Techno said crossing his arms and watching Tommy expectantly.

Tommy just grinned, rather than responding to Techno he focused on summoning his ability waiting a moment until a familiar coldness spread through his legs. Then he took off, running forward and springing off the platform letting his wings carry him over to the next one.

The difference between now and the last time he did this hit him like a truck. He had tensed, waiting for the agony that had spread through his wings the last time he did this to do the same. But much to Tommy’s surprise, there was no pain at all. He laughed as he sped towards the platform, angling his wings down a bit to get more level with it. Just before reaching the platform, he straightened up so his feet were below him again letting the remaining momentum carry him the rest of the way to the platform. His knees bent to absorb the shock of landing as he stumbled forward a bit before managing to slow himself down. He turned, a huge grin on his face, to see Techno who was looking at him in a way that Tommy had become familiar with in the last month and a half. Techno was proud of him and Tommy felt like he would do that again for the rest of his life just to see that look on Techno’s face. But Tommy had more platforms to glide to, so instead, he said “You see that Bitchnoblade, I am the COOLEST”

Tommy had gotten too comfortable with Technoblade, and Tommy knew that. Tommy knew that he wasn’t meant to be asking questions and breaking rules just because Techno was around now. But Techno had never seemed to mind, so Tommy had told himself it was okay, that it was fine, as long as he didn’t slip up around Dream it would be fine. Then, two months into training with Techno, Tommy had slipped up because when Dream slipped into his room for the first time in two months without Techno, Tommy’s first reaction was not to run into Dream’s arms.

“Where’s Techno?” Tommy asked, looking up from the book he was reading only to see Dream’s jaw clench in anger from under the mask.

“Where’s Techno? I come to visit you for the first time in two months and you ask where Technoblade is?” Dream yelled as Tommy flinched back. “You ungrateful, stupid-”

“Techno doesn’t think I’m stupid” Tommy blurted out (why did he say that WHY DID HE SAY THAT) “or ungrateful, but Techno actually spends time with me so maybe he just knows those things better than you” and oh god, Tommy was going to die. Dream was going to kill him. Why did he say that, why did he do something so stupid? Tommy knew better, Tommy knew better than to talk back to Dream, Tommy knew so why did his stupid mouth move and say that.

Dream's anger was a scary one, it was silent and so terrible that Tommy had to resist the urge to run. To activate his abilities and make a break for the door. Something Tommy had never considered doing before.

'Because you knew you wouldn't make it before a voice in Tommy whispered 'you could make it now, you could go. You're faster than Dream and he wouldn't be expecting it. You could run. You could leave.'

Tommy paused at that thought, he could leave. He was fast enough, he could run, and as long as he didn't stop running there was no way Dream or anyone else could ever catch up with him. Tommy could leave...

Tommy couldn't leave Techno.

"You've forgotten your lessons Tommy" Dream said, voice quiet but it still made Tommy flinch back "but that's okay, I'll teach them to you again." Dream crossed the room over to where Tommy was sitting, he grabbed Tommy's arm harsh enough to bruise. "Because I'm such a kind guardian, I have no problem teaching you these lessons as many times as you need to learn them" Dream's grip got tighter on Tommy's arm as he spoke and Tommy couldn't stop himself from trying to pull away. "What do you say Tommy?" but Tommy was too distracted trying to rip his arm away from Dream's grasp so Dream grabbed Tommy's hair and yanked the boy's head up so Tommy was looking directly into the pained eyes of the smiley face mask "what do you say?" Dream snarled.

"Thank you" Tommy cried flinching back again "th-thank you Dream for teaching me"

Dream let go of Tommy's hair "there we go, that wasn't so hard was it?" he said as he lightened his grip a little on Tommy's arm. "C'mon Tommy, clearly we have a lot to go over" Dream sighed as he dragged Tommy out of his room.

And for the first time since Techno started training him, Tommy wished he could go back.

Techno knew something was horribly wrong when Dream stopped Techno on his way to the stairs, intending on going down to once again visit Tommy.

"You can't go down today Technoblade" Dream said, grabbing his arm to stop Techno from passing him.

"What do you mean?" he asked, eyes narrowing.

"Tommy's sick," Dream said "he won't be able to train with you"

"Well that's okay, I'm sure Tommy would appreciate the company even if no training will be involved," Techno said, trying to rip his arm out of Dream's grip.

"That's not your job Techno" Dream growled "leave Tommy alone, go do something useful. I'm sure he'll be up for training again once he's better"

And Techno... what choice did Techno have really but to simply nod and walk away. Pushing past Dream to get to Tommy wouldn't exactly look good and as much as Techno cared for Tommy, he still had a mission to complete. Not that Techno was going to give up on going downstairs to check on Tommy, he just had to do it more subtly.

So Techno waited, he tried to go down at different times during the day, times where Dream was usually busy plotting with Sapnap or George but no matter when Techno thought it would be clear to approach the door, Dream was there. Standing guard over the only staircase that led to Tommy. So Techno kept waiting and waiting and waiting... until eventually, he watched as Dream left his position in front of the staircase. And then Techno waited some more, to make sure Dream was really gone, call him paranoid but it didn't hurt to double-check that this wasn't about to be some sort of trap. Finally satisfied that he was the only one in the hall, and likely the only one up, he left his hiding space and headed down the stairs towards Tommy's room.

He grabbed his keys and unlocked Tommy's door, unsurprised to find the room completely dark. Tommy was likely asleep but Techno needed to know, needed to make sure that Tommy was safe. So he entered the room, closing the door as quietly as he could before searching the wall next to it for the manual control for the LED lights in Tommy's room. Finally, he found the button and pressed it, squinting a bit as he got used to the light before turning to where Tommy's bed is and nearly having a heart attack.

Sitting there, staring at him with terribly empty eyes, was Tommy and he looked... he looked like someone had killed him. There was... way too much blood on his neck and under his nose and on his side but oddly enough, as far as Techno could tell, there was just blood. Tommy didn't appear injured at all.

"Tommy?" Techno whispered trying to keep the horror from his voice.

Normally Tommy would have acknowledged Techno by now but Tommy just continued staring with eyes too empty to be Tommy's. Techno walked closer to the blond and gently touched his shoulder "Tommy?" he tried again. Relief flooded through him when Tommy blinked a few times looking terribly confused.

"Techno?" Tommy mumbled and Techno winced with how hoarse Tommy's voice sounded as if he had spent hours screaming. "What are you doing here?" and then Tommy tensed eyes scanning the room "where's Dream?" he asked, his voice shaky in the way it was when Tommy was really scared.

"Dream's not here," Techno said trying to reassure him "It's just you and me, can you tell me what happened?"

Tommy stared at him for a moment and to Techno's horror tears started to spill from Tommy's eyes. The only thing worse than trying to talk to a traumatized child was trying to comfort a traumatized child. "Hey hey it's okay you don't have to tell me what happened," Techno said in a rush just trying to get Tommy to stop... leaking "let's just uh.... Let's get you cleaned up ok?"

Tommy nodded but didn't stop crying as Techno helped him up and over to the shower. "Don't leave" Tommy said, sounding like he was going to start sobbing at the idea of Techno leaving.

"I won't I won't, I'll be right here when you're done getting cleaned up" Techno reassured the young boy "I promise, I won't go anywhere"

Tommy seemed satisfied with the promise because he finally let go of Techno and went to go shower, leaving Techno alone to process what the fuck he had just found.

What the fuck did Dream do? Tommy wasn't injured, there wasn't even a bruise on him and he hadn't seemed in pain at all but Techno had found the boy covered in blood. Unless the blood wasn't his own, maybe Dream had made Tommy hurt someone? Regardless of what happened Techno was sure about two things, one that it was 100% Dream's fault and two, he had to get Tommy the fuck out of here as fast as he could. Techno had been stupid to think he could wait, that he could collect information and protect Tommy from Dream at the same time. Techno gritted his teeth, he had to speed things up on the information part of the mission. He didn't want to leave empty-handed but he couldn't let Tommy stay here for much longer.

'We're leaving' Techno decided with a nod 'by the end of the week, I'm taking Tommy and whatever information I can gather in that time and we're going home.'

Techno tried to talk to Tommy again once the other had cleaned up. They sat on Tommy's bed as Techno gently preened Tommy's wings, preening had become a part of their little schedule ever since a few weeks ago when Techno had seen the awful state of Tommy's wings. He did it now, less out of necessity and more because he knew it helped Tommy relax.

"Do you think you can tell me what happened?" Techno asked as he plucked a loose feather from Tommy's wings.

"It was no big deal," Tommy said and Techno was glad that Tommy's back was facing him so he couldn't see how Techno rolled his eyes. No big deal his ass he had walked into the room to see Tommy covered in blood.

"Well, tell me anyway" Techno retorted as he continued to run his hand through the bright red of Tommy's wings.

"It was... Dream- it was just a lesson" Tommy stuttered "really it wasn't that big of a deal it... happens sometimes"

"Huh," Techno said, trying to sound nonchalant even as his mouth pulled down into a frown. He leaned a bit closer to Tommy as something caught his eye. There was something on the back of Tommy's neck, nearly hidden by Tommy's hair, something Techno had never noticed before. "and what was the lesson on?"

“Being grateful, that Dream is so kind to me. That he provides so much for me even though I can’t pay him back for what he’s doing.” Tommy said it sounded rehearsed, robotic, completely unlike Tommy.

“I see,” Techno said as he plotted Dream’s murder in his head, reaching up and moving Tommy’s hair just a bit to get a better look.

“Techno? What are you doing?” Tommy asked but Techno didn’t answer, too busy staring at the marking on the back of Tommy’s neck. It was a smiley face, the exact same smiley face that Dream had on his mask.

“There’s something weird on your neck,” Techno told the blond after a moment “a smiley face, do you know how you got it?”

Tommy shook his head “I don’t really know, Sapnap and George have them too” he shrugged “I think everyone has at least one, except for Dream, that’s why he put it on his mask”

“Huh” Techno hummed trying to ignore the bad feeling he got in his chest looking at the mark “weird”

“You haven’t gotten one yet, have you? Sapnap said it was a tattoo and that Dream gave them to everyone in his inner circle. I don’t really know what a tattoo is, but I guess when I got mine I was too young to remember.” Tommy shrugged unbothered “you’ll have to tell me about it when you finally get yours”

The idea of having that stupid smiley face tattooed to his skin made Techno feel nauseous but regardless he just nodded “sure Tommy”

Techno left Tommy’s room around 3 AM, but instead of heading back to his room, he beelined for Dream’s office. He needed information and now wasn’t the time to be cautious. He pushed open the door to Dream’s office and made his way over to the desk. Carefully he started opening drawers, as silently as he could. The first three were weirdly empty, just some scattered office supplies. But the fourth one, the fourth one was jam-packed with manilla files. Techno frowned, eyes squinting as he struggled to read the labels on them in the poor lighting.

There looked to be a file on everyone who was a part of Dream’s organization, including himself and as curious as Techno was on what his file held, there were much more important people whose files were right in front of him. He pulled out Sapnap’s file first, glanced over it, and immediately knew he had hit that jackpot. On just the first page he had learned Sapnap’s real name, the full extent of Sappnaps powers, his hybrid heritage, and how long he had been with Dream. There was also that stupid smiley face again next to a number 3 that Techno told himself he’d figure out later. It was easy. It was too easy.

Techno pushed that thought aside for now, easy or not he still carefully took the first page from Sapnap’s file out and set it aside. Next, he pulled George’s file, or rather 404’s file, and set the first page from that one aside as well. Slowly he went through the files, picking out

the people from Dream's inner circle and setting the first page in their files aside. He was just about done when a name caught his eye. One that wasn't part of Dream's circle, one that, as far as Techno was aware, wasn't a part of Dream's organization at all.

'ExDee' the label read, the name of a big villain that had popped up over ten years ago. The villain had terrorized the public, killed hundreds, and had destroyed the lives of thousands of people before he had been stopped, permanently. ExDee's been dead for nine years, Techno would know, as it had been Techno's father that had thrust a sword through the demon's chest during his worst and final attack on L'manburg. It was during that final attack that Phil had made a name for himself in the hero world as the Angel of Death. Techno had heard the story enough times to know. So why, nine years after the villain had been killed, was there a file on him in Dream's office? Why did Dream have a file on the villain that had killed Wilbur's little brother?

Techno didn't really have the time to figure that out so he set the file down next to the other papers he had grabbed and went to close the drawer when another file caught his eye.

Written in red ink at the top was the name 'Thomas' and Techno... Techno couldn't help himself. He couldn't ignore it. So he grabbed it and flipped it open to find it was completely blank except for that stupid smiley face again, printed next to the number eight.

Techno sighed and put the file back, it made sense in a way that Dream didn't have much in Tommy's file. Dream did his best to completely erase any signs that Tommy existed in the first place so of course Dream wouldn't have much besides his name and that stupid smiley face. There weren't even any cameras anywhere on the storage level, it had been one of the first things Techno had checked for when he found out about Tommy. If it weren't for the fact that the kid was literally locked in a room in the basement, it would be almost impossible to prove that Tommy ever existed.

Techno shook himself out of his thoughts, glancing at the clock to see it was nearing 4 AM, he needed to grab the papers and go before anyone started waking up. After all, he couldn't risk getting caught, not when Tommy was still relying on him. Not when he had a promise to keep. Not when his family was still waiting for him to come home. So Techno scooped up the papers and snuck back to his room, lifting the loose floorboard under his bed where his communicator lay waiting. He had a check-in coming up on Wednesday, he could send pictures and relay all the info he had and then he could ask for a pickup and finally, finally get him and Tommy out of here. Just a couple of more days.

They just had to hold on for a couple more days.

Chapter End Notes

Hey guys! Thanks so much for reading this chapter, as always if you enjoyed please feel free to let me know! Comments are super motivational to me and really encourage me to keep this story going. Also thank you so much for over 500 Kudos! That is absolutely

crazy! Also, I have a linktree set up that has links to my twitter and the Spotify playlists I have set up for both stories I'm writing <https://linktr.ee/batmansmom> and if that wasn't enough I also have a discord server! I'm planning on posting some cannon facts about the characters and the universe there that likely won't show up in this story on there! It's also meant to be a place for artists, writers, editors and readers to all come together to enjoy Dream SMP/SBI content together! So here's the link to that <https://discord.gg/9qM4wBPp> feel free to join, thanks again for reading! Until next time <3

Wither

Chapter Summary

“Or what?” Techno snarled.

“Or I’ll kill Tommy” he shrugged, far too casual about this whole thing for Techno’s liking.

“You wouldn’t,” Techno said, though he didn’t really believe his own words

Chapter Notes

so uh... yeah... um... *hands you box of tissues* you uh might need these. In other news, there was a lot of info dropped in this chapter so if you're confused by anything please feel free to drop questions in the comments I'm always happy to clarify. Sorry if it gets confusing especially in the beginning, I wrote the first half of this chapter at 2 am but I was suuuuper sleep deprived.

Warnings: Violence, blood, mentions of torture, death

See the end of the chapter for more [notes](#)

Techno knew it couldn’t last. He had waited too long, underestimated the dangers of being in such close proximity to a supervillain, he had ignored the bad feelings for far too long. He realized that now as he searched frantically through his room for the communicator. He had a check-in in less than three hours and he was sure he had stored it underneath the loose floorboard where he put the files. But when he went to check to make sure it was charged enough to use, it was gone. It was gone, it wasn’t anywhere in Techno’s room, they had been so close.

He heard the door creak open behind him.

So so close.

“Technoblade” Dream said sounding far too cheerful for Techno’s liking “looking for something”

He turned to see the masked villain holding his communicator because of course, he was. Of course, Dream knew, Techno was an idiot.

Dream tossed power restraints down in front of Techno. “Put those on”

“Or what?” Techno snarled.

“Or I’ll kill Tommy” he shrugged, far too casual about this whole thing for Techno’s liking.

“You wouldn’t,” Techno said, though he didn’t really believe his own words “he’s meant to be your big weakness right? He means something to you”

And Dream, Dream just laughed “oh sure, the child means something to me. But he became your weakness too and unlike you, I don’t mind suffering a minor loss for the greater good of my cause.”

Techno put the restraints on.

As soon as they were on, Dream stepped to the side letting Sapnap and George into the room who roughly grabbed Techno’s arms and started pulling him along. Techno did his best to make their job as difficult as possible, going completely limp so they were just dragging his dead weight along. This succeeded in annoying them both greatly, and also gave Techno rug burn, but it was definitely worth it.

“Would you fucking stop” Sapnap complained as he dragged Techno much to Techno’s amusement as they headed in the direction of the hold, where Dream kept prisoners. Not that there were usually any down there, most of the time they were only held for a day or two before Dream publicly executed them in the name of sending a message.

“Would it be easier for you if I stopped?” Techno asked, looking at Sapnap lazily.

“Yes” George huffed “yes it would”

“Then no.”

Sapnap groaned and rolled his eyes “stupid fuckin pig” he snarled clearly frustrated by Techno’s actions. They continued down the hall until Dream made a left turn instead of heading straight, where the holding cells were.

“Hey uh, Dream buddy you made a wrong turn, holding cells are that way” Techno informed him helpfully.

“We aren’t going to the holding cells” Dream snickered “not yet anyway”

“So uh mind telling me where we are going?”

“It’s a surprise”

“I hate surprises” Techno deadpanned “they’re awful, one of my least favorite things”

“Dream, can we please gag him?” Sapnap complained, “or threaten Tommy again so that he walks on his own, pleeease?” Techno tensed slightly at the mention of threatening Tommy again, he really was in a bad spot this time, wasn’t he?

“No you’re fine, it’s not much farther” Dream dismissed as he took another left. That’s when Techno realized where they were heading. There was only one thing important in this direction, the stairway to the storage level.

“No no hey you said you’d leave Tommy alone” Techno protested as they headed towards the stairwell.

“No, I said I wouldn’t kill him” Dream grinned “and I won’t, besides we aren’t going to Tommy’s room, you need to be taught a lesson Technoblade”

The group headed down the stairs into the storage room, past Tommy’s door (much to Techno’s relief), and over to what looked like a utility closet. Dream pulled out the keys and unlocked the door, opening it up to reveal a very steep staircase that Techno really didn’t want to be dragged down so he started walking on his own again.

‘Tommy’s classroom’ Techno realized ‘Tommy said it was below the storage level, that’s where they’re taking me’

As they headed down the stairs, Techno couldn’t help but notice some very disturbing things. For one, there were scratch marks everywhere, ones on the door as if someone was trying to claw their way out, ones on the wall as if someone had dug their fingers in as if to prevent themselves from traveling the rest of the way down only to be dragged away by someone much stronger. There were old dark stains everywhere, the staircase down to the place looked like a nightmare. Techno doesn’t even want to think about what the ‘classroom’ was going to look like. And then there was the new level of horrified Techno felt when he realized that only one person could have made those marks.

‘Whatever happened down here,’ Techno realized feeling more than a little nauseous at the thought ‘was bad enough that Tommy had left gouges in cement walls in an attempt to not have to experience it again.’

The stairs opened up to a tiny room, with a single wooden school desk in the center that Techno got the chills just looking at. Sapnap and George stopped just in front of the desk while Dream stood at the front of the room.

“So...” Techno said conversationally, figuring he’d try and put off whatever the hell was about to happen as much as he could “how’d you figure it out?”

Dream laughed “Techno, I knew from the start! The moment you started sneaking around trying to get into my operation I had my suspicions of course that the heroes had sent a spy. But I gave you the benefit of the doubt at first, sent some people your way that would lead you to one of our smaller bases of operation. It quickly became obvious that while it was true, your hatred for the government was very real and very much so alive, your bonds with your family weren’t nearly as damaged as you claimed. It was very touching, seeing you hug Wilbur and Phil for the last time before joining one of the bigger bases. Or, I’m sorry, should I call them by those names? Or would you prefer I use their hero names: Zephyrus and Ghostbur?”

“How do you know that?” Techno asked, no one knew his family’s real identities and even though they often worked together in the field no one knew the three heroes were actually a father and his two sons. “how the fuck do you know about them?”

“Oh I know more than that Technoblade, I know much more than that! I’d go as far as to say I know more about your family than you do.” Dream grinned “how does it feel Technoblade? Knowing I was ten steps ahead of you this whole time?”

“If you knew the whole time, why even let me get this far?” he questioned glaring at Dream “Why invite me into your inner circle if you knew that I was a spy this whole time?”

“Isn’t it obvious?” Dream said, grin not leaving his face, it seemed to only grow with Techno’s anger “so you could meet Tommy, so you could finally meet your little brother” and then his face darkened “and so I could finally get my revenge on Zephyrus, for killing mine”

Techno stared at Dream trying to process the information because Phil had only ever killed one person. One person in his entire hero career, which meant that Dream was talking about ExDee. This meant that ExDee had been Dream’s brother, which meant that Dream wasn’t human. And then the rest of Dream’s words caught up with him and Techno felt like he couldn’t breathe. There was no way what Dream was saying was true, no way in hell. “i-Tommy is... no. NO. That’s- that’s not possible. Wilbur saw him die, ten years ago, he- he bled out in Wil’s arms. ExDee cut his throat, Wilbur felt it when his heart stopped.” Techno stuttered listing off the few facts he knew about his would have been little brother’s death that he had heard only once when Wilbur had gotten way too drunk and sad. Techno had never even had the chance to meet the kid, he didn’t even know his name because Wilbur and Phil refused to talk about him, Techno hadn’t been adopted until a year after Wilbur’s little brother had died, there was no way that Tommy was... Tommy was... Tommy was Wilbur’s little brother. Tommy was Phil’s youngest child. Tommy was Techno’s little brother. Dream had been TORTURING Techno’s little brother for the last ten years.

“If it makes you feel better, technically Wilbur was right, the child did die but they never recovered the body” Dream said, “because ExDee had brought it back to me, as a gift.”

“How then?” Techno asked almost too scared to hear the answer “if Wilbur was right and- and Tommy... Tommy died, then how is he here now”

Dream grinned “I was hoping you’d ask that question.” and Techno felt his stomach drop as Dream lifted a comm up to his cheek, “alright Punz you can bring him down now”

Above him, Techno heard the door to the stairwell creep open and with it, the sound of Tommy pleading.

“Please please don’t please” Tommy sobbed “please I’ll be good I’ll be good I’ll be good please”

Techno glared at Dream as he started struggling against Sapnap and George “you said-”

“I said I wouldn’t kill him” Dream shrugged “not that I wouldn’t get him involved, really Techno you need to work on those listening skills”

Techno growled at Dream trying to yank his arms away from Sapnap and George. "If you keep struggling, I don't care what Dream says I will hurt Tommy" Sapnap snapped "I'll give the little shit something to cry about if you don't behave"

Dream sighed "Sapnap c'mon don't ruin the fun," he said just as Punz and Tommy entered the room. Tommy froze at the sight in front of him, Techno being restrained by Sapnap and George was bound to be confusing for the kid.

"What's going on?" Tommy asked quietly, tears still streaming down his face, taking his eyes off of Techno to look over to Dream "why- why is Techno..."

"Tommy I have some bad news," Dream said, not sounding upset at all about this as Punz walked Tommy over to where he was standing "Techno was a traitor the whole time" and Techno winced at that, that... that probably didn't look good for the teenager with trust issues. "He's been working for the heroes and they were going to use you to take me down. Just like I said they would"

"What?" Tommy frowned looking back at Techno and Techno felt physical pain seeing the brief flash of hurt in Tommy's eyes. "No... Techno that's- that's not true is it? You- you're not really-"

"Tommy-" Techno started, shaking his head.

"I have the proof right here Tommy" Dream said holding up Techno's communicator "he was using this to relay information about us, about you this whole time."

"I- what? What even is that?" Tommy asked visibly confused by the comm "no no this has to be some kind of joke, Techno would never-"

"But he did Tommy" Dream interrupted, setting a hand down on the blond's shoulder ignoring how the boy tensed at the motion "he did, he betrayed us and now he needs to learn a lesson. And I need your help to teach it"

"I-" Tommy paused looking so painfully confused "I don't know... I don't really- can't- can't someone else-"

"Tommy," Dream scolded "Are you disobeying me? Again? I thought we had gone over this, I thought I had gotten through to you the last time we were down here"

"I-" Tommy paused looking between Techno and Dream, clearly torn between wanting to stand up for Techno and his fear of Dream. Techno did his best to give Tommy a reassuring look, he didn't want the kid- his brother (god that was weird to think about), to get hurt trying to protect Techno. Tommy seemed to understand because he nodded before looking down and quietly saying "no Dream, I'm sorry... of course- of course, I'll help you"

"Good, that's good, I don't think Techno would have gotten the message very well if I had to have George or Sapnap help me." Dream said shooting Techno a smug look "George, cut off power to the restraints"

Techno frowned, that... that wasn't what he was expecting. Why would Dream give Techno access to his powers? Were they expecting him to fight back against Tommy when Dream inevitably made the boy attack him? Because that wasn't happening, not in a million years. He watched carefully as George turned off the power suppressants, he thought for a moment about trying to break away from him and Sapnap and grab Tommy and just make a run for it. But then he saw Punz drift closer to Tommy with a hand on the knife that was strapped to his waist and well Techno knew a threat when he saw one so he stayed still. It took a moment but soon after the restraints were turned off, Techno could feel his power reconnect and he couldn't help the relief that spread through him now that it was back. Techno didn't really use his power very often, it was too dangerous to use in most situations, but there was always something unnatural about not being able to feel it lingering in the back of his head.

"George, is it back?" Dream asked and Techno frowned at the question.

"Yeah it's there," George said and Techno turned slightly to see the villain's eyes were glowing, a common sign someone's powers were active and the realization hit him. They had suspected there was someone with a hijacking ability in Dream's inner circle, but most had theorized that it was Dream pulling the strings or possibly Punz. 'Clearly, they were all very wrong' Techno thought to himself as he felt George's power overtake him and his body froze in place. Techno felt Sapnap let go of him and he tried to move his arms, trying to fight George's power to no avail.

"Good, activate it" Dream nodded as Sapnap took another step back and Techno felt a power surge into the palms of his hands, creating a purple glow as his own superpower activated. Techno winced, as pain shot through his hands and up to his arms, he really tried not to use the ability unless Wilbur was around for fear that Phil would kill him, not that he had any choice in the matter at the moment.

"What is this?" Techno asked, relieved he could at least still do that "what's your plan here?"

"You seriously haven't figured it out yet?" Dream asked, shaking his head, before pushing Tommy forward, closer to Techno. Closer to Techno's still glowing hands.

"No," Techno mumbled, God, he felt like an idiot. Of course, that would be Dream's plan, Dream knew Techno's weaknesses, Dream had never intended Tommy to hurt Techno. He had intended for Techno to kill Tommy. In the most painful way possible. "Please please no, Tommy stay back don't come any closer" he pleaded as he fought internally for control back, he needed to deactivate his power before Tommy got any closer than he already was.

"Wow resorting to begging already Technoblade" Dream grinned "that's pretty pathetic, considering the fun hasn't even started yet"

Techno glared at Dream with enough rage to make the masked villain falter for a moment "you said you weren't going to kill him,"

"And I'm not" Dream said cheerfully, shoving Tommy closer once again "you are."

Tommy stumbled forward, far too close for Techno's taste. "Tommy, please I know- I know you're scared of him but don't listen. Don't come any closer, please, I don't want to hurt you"

Techno begged.

‘I don’t want to lose you, not now, not when I finally have a chance to bring you back home to Wilbur and Phil again’

“Tommy” Dream sighed when the blond hesitated in front of Techno “there are worse ways we can do this, don’t forget that. Don’t forget what I’ve taught you, Tommy, he’s a hero, do you really trust him? Over your own family?”

Techno opened his mouth to argue only to find no words would come out, he glared at George as the villain simply smirked, looking far too pleased with himself. ‘When I get out of here,’ Techno thought ‘I’m going to kill you first’ and was just a bit satisfied at the way George’s face paled slightly. Then Techno turned his attention back to Tommy, back to fighting trying to deactivate his power, trying to save his little brother’s life as Dream whispered lies and threats in the blond’s ear.

Techno met Tommy’s eyes and silently shook his head, silently begging his brother not to do this. But Dream had gotten a head start on him, had ten years of manipulation and pain where Techno had only known Tommy for two months. Tommy looked up at Techno, silently apologizing as he reached forward and took Techno’s glowing hand in his own. And Techno, for a moment, Techno could have sworn Tommy’s blue eyes glowed for a second as they looked into his own. And then Tommy was pulling away and Techno’s power faded back into the background again.

For a moment, nothing happened and Techno hoped against hope that maybe, maybe his power hadn’t worked. Maybe Tommy’s eyes really had glowed, maybe Tommy’s power had canceled out his own. Then the veins on Tommy’s arms turned pitch black as Wither started to take effect. Tommy whimpered as he stumbled back, black blood started seeping slowly from his nose and ears and as Wither took full effect, the only thing Techno could hear was Tommy’s screaming as George’s powers finally deactivated.

No one tried to stop Techno as he surged forward, catching Tommy just as the boy’s legs gave out. Probably because everyone in this room knew that it was too late to stop Wither’s effect because once Wither had a target, it didn’t matter if it was a living one or not, Techno’s power would work through it from the inside out until there was nothing left. It destroyed everything it came in contact with, including Tommy.

“I’m sorry” Techno murmured as he held his little brother close to his chest, trying to ignore how his vision blurred with unshed tears “I’m so sorry, I should have prioritized getting you out of here, I should have taken you and run, I’m so sorry Tommy” Techno wasn’t sure if Tommy could even hear him or not at this point but he kept talking anyway “It’s going to be okay, it’s almost over, I’m sorry Tommy, I’m so so sorry” he kept apologizing, holding Tommy gently as one hand carded through Tommy’s feather’s, trying to offer the child as much comfort as he could. This went on for nearly ten minutes, withering away wasn’t exactly the fastest or most painless way to die, before Tommy fell silent.

The moment it ended, the moment Tommy’s heart stopped, Sapnap and George came forward again, grabbing Techno and dragging him away from his brother’s body. And Techno, Techno

didn't have it in him to fight anymore. He just watched, detached from it all, as Dream took his place on the floor next to Tommy's body.

"Well," Dream said cheerfully "that was definitely one of the more interesting ways I've seen someone die"

Techno didn't respond, he just stared emotionlessly at the body of his little brother.

"You're all quiet now" Dream noted with a frown "I was hoping for more, I'm not going to lie. Maybe some screaming? Maybe some more begging? No? Not feeling it? Okay well not that we have everything set up, it's time for the lesson"

"The lesson?" Techno repeated, tearing his eyes away from Tommy's body for a moment to look at the masked villain "you mean that wasn't it?"

Dream laughed "of course not, I mean not really. After all the original question, Technoblade was how Tommy was alive even after having died in Wilbur- sorry I mean Ghostbur's arms, you still want to know don't you?"

"What?"

"You've witnessed the first part, Tommy's dead. Again." Dream said in a patronizing tone "now it's time for the second part, bringing Tommy back and all you have to do to make it happen is ask me nicely"

Techno stared at Dream and then glanced down at Tommy, he knew this was some sort of power play to Dream. Some sort of pride thing, but Techno couldn't care less about his pride right now. If Dream was being serious, if there was even a chance that Dream could bring Tommy back- "please" Techno said looking the villain in the eyes as he begged for his little brother's life "please bring Tommy back, please, I am begging you, you can do whatever you want to me just please please bring him back"

Dream grinned "well since you asked so nicely Techno, I suppose I can finish the lesson," he said as he placed his hand over Tommy's head. Behind the mask, Techno could see a faint white glow that transferred down to Dream's hands too. He placed his hand on Tommy's head and Techno watched as the effects of wither were cleared from Tommy's body, watched as his veins returned to their normal color and blood stopped leaking from his nose and ears. The only evidence that Tommy had gotten withered at all was the dried blood on his face.

Then Tommy's eyes flew open as he gasped, taking in as much air as he could force into his lungs. He coughed a few times and slowly sat up, appearing completely unharmed, it was as if he had never died. Techno fell to his knees as relief flooded through him, Tommy was okay, Tommy was alive.

Dream could revive dead people.

Fuck.

Chapter End Notes

Hey guys! Thanks so much for reading this chapter, as always if you enjoyed please feel free to let me know! Comments are super motivational to me and really encourage me to keep this story going. Also thank you so much for almost 700 Kudos! That is wild dude! Also, I have a linktree set up that has links to my twitter and the Spotify playlists I have set up for both stories I'm writing <https://linktr.ee/batmansmom> and if that wasn't enough I also have a discord server! I'm planning on posting some cannon facts about the characters and the universe there that likely won't show up in this story on there! It's also meant to be a place for artists, writers, editors and readers to all come together to enjoy Dream SMP/SBI content together! It's also where you can try and convince me to give our heroes here a happy ending (just kidding, of course, this story already has a planned ending). So here's the link to that <https://discord.gg/9qM4wBPp> feel free to join, thanks again for reading! Until next time <3

Field Trip!!

Chapter Summary

“Erm well I uh I kind of can’t right now” Tommy explained to the box “that’s sorta the thing, I was just about to leave to go rescue him when um when you started... talking?”

“Rescue him?” the box sounded very alarmed “rescue him from what? Is he okay? What happened?”

“Well... Mr. Box, or Mrs. Box I don’t know your story... do boxes even have genders-”

“What happened to Techno mate?”

Chapter Notes

Hiiiiiii... Sorry if I caused you pain last chapter, in my defense.... it was funny

anyway uh enjoy this chapter!

This chapter does include: mentions of death, blood, violence and hearing voices :)

See the end of the chapter for more [notes](#)

Tommy didn’t remember much after Dream pulled him out of the void. Trips there always seemed to leave Tommy dazed and confused, not usually because of the void itself but rather because of the weird back and forth pull of death and life. The void itself was oddly nice, endless and dark but not restraining. Sometimes, Tommy felt more free in the hours he spent in the void than he did the years he’s spent alive. That was until Techno came around and Techno changed everything about life. Everything about living. Techno had taught him to run and to climb and to glide and Techno had promised him he’d see the sky and the trees someday.

Seeing Techno now, Tommy couldn’t help but wonder how he was going to keep those promises. Techno couldn’t show him shit if he was dead.

There was something else bothering Tommy, something lingering just in the back of his head, like a word he couldn’t remember. A feeling, one Tommy couldn’t remember having experienced before. The weird feeling only got worse when he looked at Dream.

‘Communicator, keys, mask, Techno’s Communicator, knife’

Tommy flinched back a little as voices he did not recognize filled his head.

“Tommy?” Dream asked, frowning down at the blond “Tommy that’s not how you should respond to me after I just saved your life again”

Tommy couldn’t focus, not with the chanting going on in his head. Instead, he screwed his eyes shut, as soon as he was no longer looking at Dream the voices faded but didn’t stop. Instead, they started chanting something different.

‘Technoblade or Dream, Technoblade or Dream, Technoblade or Dream’

“Tommy! Are you even paying attention? Look at me when I’m talking to you” that was Dream, he sounded angry but when Tommy tried to obey and open his eyes the voices in his head suddenly got louder again.

‘Communicator, keys, mask, Techno’s Communicator, knife’ They started chanting again and Tommy couldn’t take it. He pressed his hands against his ears in an attempt to block out the voices but it wasn’t working because the voices were coming from inside his head.

“Shut up just shut up” Tommy begged “what do you want from me? Leave me alone”

‘Pick one’ a voice said ‘pick one and we’ll leave you alone’

“Tommy” rough hands grabbed his wrists pulling his hands away from his ears “what are you three years old? Stop acting like a toddler throwing a tantrum”

Dream that’s right he was still with Dream, in the classroom. He... he had said those things out loud.

“Sorry sorry sorry, you’re right I- I’m sorry I just.... Got thrown off I think” Tommy said hoping it was convincing as he forced his eyes open again.

Dream gave him a weird look but sighed, Tommy tried to ignore the voices as they started chanting again. The exact same sequence of things as before. “Whatever, I’ll overlook it this time. You did a good job today, guess it makes sense you might be more thrown off than usual. That’s the second time I had to pull you out of the void this week. I didn’t think that there might be consequences to that ” Dream frowned “now c’mon get up, we need to get you back to your room. You need to rest”

Tommy nodded and scrambled to his feet, almost immediately falling over as the weird pressure in the back of his head increased. Dream grabbed his arm and steadied him, looking over the blond cautiously. They started walking towards the staircase, leaning a bit against Dream to keep himself upright and Tommy noted duly that the only people left in the room had been him and Dream.

“What’s going to happen to Techno?” The question slipped out before Tommy could get himself in the right state to hold back the question.

Dream sighed but other than that he didn't say anything about Tommy or his questions "Sapnap and George are taking him to a holding cell for now, we'll probably have to kill him now. He knows too much"

Tommy nodded pretending he didn't feel his stomach doing flips at the idea of Techno... well... honestly Tommy wasn't sure how to feel about Techno. On one hand, the other had betrayed him, had pretended to be his friend all so he could use Tommy against Dream, against the person who had raised him. On the other hand, Techno had held him so gently when Tommy was dying, had apologized about 1000 times, and had seemed genuinely worried and upset when Tommy was dying. Said blond shuddered a bit thinking about the death, that had been one of if not the most painful one he had yet to experience.

As Tommy and Dream made their way up the stairs, the voices started getting louder and more insistent that he pick something from the sequence they were chanting. It was starting to give Tommy a headache and Tommy really just wanted the voices to stop. So he thought about the items they were chanting and decided to focus on Techno's communicator. He was the most interested in that one, for one thing having no idea what the fuck a communicator even was and for another it was apparently Dream's proof that Techno was with the heroes. That Techno was a bad guy and who knew maybe the voices would tell him more about it. Maybe then he could properly sort through his feelings about Techno.

Instead of telling him more though, the voices quieted and Tommy's pocket suddenly felt a bit heavier than it had been a moment ago. 'Surely not' Tommy thought to himself as he tried to keep the panic from his face. He glanced up at Dream but the masked man wasn't looking at him, so Tommy glanced down at his jacket pocket. Sure enough there was something there that hadn't been there before.

It was black and rectangular and looked exactly like the thing that Dream was holding earlier. And now it was in Tommy's pocket.

Tommy glanced back up at Dream and blinked in surprise, floating around the other were the remaining words that had been chanted by the voices earlier. He looked away quickly because there was just no way this was happening to him right now. He must be going crazy, maybe he was dreaming, maybe he was still in the void, maybe none of this was real.

'Nope it's real' one of the voices, the one before that encouraged him to pick an item in the first place 'it's all very real.'

"Who the fuck are you?" Tommy asked under his breath, catching an odd look from Dream that made the pair pause at the top of the stairs.

'We are chat!' the voices responded together 'congratulations on finally activating your power!'

Then one weird loner voice cheered 'hell yeah I've been waitin for this one!'

"Tommy, are you hearing voices?" Dream asked jaw clenched as he glared threateningly at Tommy "be. Honest."

“Uh, I um...” Tommy gulped and took a step away choosing to lean on the wall instead of on Dream “yeah, yeah I am”

“And what are they saying, Tommy?” Dream asked, stepping back into Tommy’s personal space, so close Tommy felt like he didn’t have enough room to even breathe.

“The void,” Tommy blurted out, “they’re talking about the void and their life there.”

There was a pause as Dream considered his words as if trying to tell whether Tommy was lying or not before the masked man nodded “I see, another unexpected consequence of pulling you out too soon after the last time. We’ll have to keep an eye on that” Dream muttered to himself, grabbing Tommy’s arm again “c’mon I don’t want you out of your room for longer than you have to be, especially not when it’s likely that the heroes know about your existence.”

Tommy just nodded trying not to look at the white words floating around Dream as they exited the classroom and headed back towards the door that led to Tommy’s room. Tommy couldn’t help but hesitate slightly as Dream took out the keys and unlocked the door. As if sensing his hesitation, Dream put his hand on Tommy’s shoulder and guided him inside the room.

“You just try and get some rest ok?” Dream said “I’ll come back to check on you in the morning” and then he left. Closing the door behind him, and Tommy listened with a growing sense of helplessness as the locks clicked. Then Tommy noticed something weird, even though he couldn’t see Dream anymore, he could still see those floating white words. Even as Dream’s footsteps could be heard walking away from the door, the words stayed. Fading slightly the farther away Dream got but they stayed nonetheless. And that’s when Tommy got an idea, a stupid idea, a desperate idea, really possibly the worst option he could pick for himself, but possibly the best and only option that might save Techno.

So before the words could fade completely, Tommy focused on the keys, holding out his hand as he did, watching in shock and joy as the item materialized in his hand. Tommy had Dream’s keys, Tommy had the keys that unlocked almost every door in the building including his own. Tommy had keys, Tommy had Techno’s weird box thing, Tommy had a clock, Tommy had a map and most importantly Tommy had a plan.

‘Oh!’ a voice from chat spoke up ‘don’t forget you have wither too!’

Wait... what? Wither? As in, as in Techno’s power? The one that had just killed him? That wither?

‘Yep,’ the voice replied ‘that’s the one!’

Oh, what the fuck. Whatever, he could figure all this stupid shit out later, after he freed Techno and made sure he got the fuck out of here.

“Hey Clementine,” Tommy said as he approached the potted plant “how do you feel about going on a little field trip to the Outside?”

If the plant could talk, Tommy was pretty sure she'd be screaming 'fucking finally!' but the plant could not talk. So Tommy would never know for sure.

Tommy was starting to second guess his decision.

"Honestly clem," he said as he shoved the belongings he wanted to take with him into the fitted sheet he had pulled from his bed. He didn't exactly have a bag or anything to pack things into so this was the next best thing. Better than leaving it all behind, that was for sure. "Why am I even doing this, this is such a stupid idea. If Dream found out he'd kill me for sure, and you know I think he'd probably just let me stay dead that time around." he paused as he threw the last book from his bookshelf in, the last of the belongings he intended to take with him "I mean, Techno's a fuckin traitor or some shit, he's a hero. Heroes... heroes don't do anything good unless it's for themselves, that's what Dream says." he sighed as he tied the sheet up tightly hoping this would be enough to keep the things inside together and safe. "Then again, I don't... I don't think I should listen to Dream anymore. He... he's lied about about a lot. And Techno- I don't know Clem, Techno's the first friend I've ever had that can actually talk back to me. Don't you think maybe... maybe he deserves the benefit of the doubt? I mean running off with Techno would at least be something different, even if it's worse and more dangerous. At least I'd be out of this damned room" Tommy finished and took a deep breath gathering his courage as he slung the makeshift bag over this shoulder and grabbed his map and the keys, Techno's communicator thing was still in his pocket and Clementine was hanging out of his other one. He had had to pull her from her usual pot and instead packed her and her roots safely inside the pocket. He wished he could have taken her pot with them but it was far too bulky and breakable.

"Alright, let do th-" he was interrupted by a loud buzzing sound coming from the comm thingy "shit," Tommy said dropping his things and pulling it out "uhhh make it stop make it stop make it stop make it stop" he mumbled to himself as he started pressing random buttons just trying to get the thing to shut up. Finally, he must have found the right one because it stopped buzzing.

"Oh thank god" Tommy sighed and then he froze as a terrible sound came from the thing, much worse than the buzzing and then-

"Hello? Techno are you there mate?"

"Uh..." fuck fuck fuck fuck "uh no sorry it's erm it's not Techno"

There was shuffling coming from the weird box that was talking to him now "oh... Well uh, do you mind telling me who I am speaking to?"

"Uhhhh" Tommy panicked "my name's umm Theseus" brilliant good job Tommy solid name there.

"Theseus huh... " the box didn't sound like it believed him "well can you pass me off to Techno"

“Erm well, I uh I kind of can’t right now” Tommy explained to the box “that’s sorta the thing, I was just about to leave to go rescue him when um when you started... talking?”

“Rescue him?” the box sounded very alarmed “rescue him from what? Is he okay? What happened?”

“Well... Mr. Box, or Mrs. Box I don’t know your story... do boxes even have genders-”

“What happened to Techno mate?”

The box was starting to sound very annoyed “uh Dream kinda caught him” Tommy answered “you were... I’m pretty sure you were there for that bit, I got you off of Dream after all. But uh anyway, Techno’s in a cell so I’m breaking out of my room to go rescue him.”

“Right okay, holy shit um listen kid do you think you can send your cords to me? We need to get a team out to your location as soon as possible” the box requested and Tommy frowned, not sure why the box would need the coordinates when it was right next to Tommy.

“Um Sorry, I don’t really know how to do that. Besides I’m on a bit of a time crunch right now Mr. Box. I really gotta go get Techno before Dream comes back” Tommy told the box “I was already planning on bringing you with me so could you please just keep quiet for now? Once I get Techno out of jail then you’ll be able to talk to him.”

“I-” the box sighed “ok, I’ll be quiet but if you run into danger I want you to press that big red button ok? It’ll send a signal that you need help and once you get to Techno I need to speak with him right away”

“Alright sounds good to me Mr. Box, I’m sorry I really should have asked this earlier but do you have a name or is Mr. Box ok?” Tommy asked as he stuck the comm back into the pocket of his jacket. He gathered his things again and took a deep breath as he prepared his abilities as he approached the door with keys in hand.

“I’m Zephyrus mate” the box- Zephyrus responded.

“Zephireeus” Tommy said “got it, well I’m gonna unlock the door, try not to fall out of my pocket when I start running. I can go very fast and I don’t have time to backtrack.”

“I will do my best” Zephy-guy said although Tommy felt like for whatever reason he wasn’t being as serious as the situation required.

“Alright,” Tommy said taking a deep breath “let’s do this, time to go save stupid fuckin Technoblade” he nodded approaching the door. It took a minute for Tommy to unlock everything and when the last lock finally clicked back he opened the door ready to step out of his room by himself for the first time ever-

And he was closing the door again “I can’t do this” he mumbled “I can’t- Dream would be so mad I can’t leave what was I thinking”

“It’s okay mate,” Zephydude told him, the box’s tone was oddly comforting “it’s alright to be scared but you’ve got this. All you have to do is get to Techno and we’ll handle the rest.

You'll be out of there in no time. I promise."

"Okay," Tommy said, taking a deep breath as he put his hand on the doorknob again "okay you're right Zephyman, I got this. Today's been the weirdest day of my life between the voices and this random box suddenly talking to me but that's okay. It's a good sign, I've got my powers now, Techno's been training me for months. There's no one in this building who could stop me right now. I just gotta- I just gotta do it, I just gotta start running like I do on the treadmill or in the storage room that one time. I just gotta- I just gotta pretend like it's training, like Techno's right next to me--"

"Mate"

"Right, sorry you're right I was stalling, okay let's do this" Tommy said opening the door that led out of his room once more. He paused for a second, trying to shake off the last of his nerves. Then he let the muscles in his legs tense as he knelt down the way Techno had shown him, he took another deep breath and before he could sike himself out again, Tommy took off, running as fast as he could away from the room, away from the storage level, towards the stairs, towards freedom. Towards Techno.

It was surprisingly easy to find Techno's cell. Having been staring at that stupid blue map for weeks, Tommy easily knew all the quickest routes to pretty much anywhere in the bunker despite never having gone above the storage level before. He had slowed down when they finally got to the holding cells, passing empty cell after empty cell before finally, finally, Tommy spotted a very familiar friend.

"Techno!" he cheered quietly coming up to the weird see-through green-colored wall thing that kept Techno inside of the cell.

"Tommy?" Techno asked in clear disbelief "Tommy what are you doing here, it's not safe--"

"I'm breaking you out dickhead" Tommy interrupted as he examined the wall "the fuck is this thing?"

"It's a forcefield, Tommy, don't touch it" Techno sighed "really you shouldn't be here, it's too dangerous--"

"Oh fuck off" Tommy snarled "this really isn't the time to be talking about what's too dangerous, now what the fuck is a forcefield and what do I destroy to take it down?"

"It's- listen we don't have time to explain that so I'll do it later, and you would need to destroy the metal looking panel thing on the wall next to it" Techno whispered and Tommy nodded "but you need to do it quietly--"

"Shut up Blade, God what do you take me for some kind of amateur. This isn't my first prison break ya know" Tommy retorted as he examined the weird metal plate thing Techno was talking about.

“Tommy this is literally you’re first time being above ground in like ten years” Techno deadpanned “which leads me to my next question, how the fuck did you get up here?”

“I stole Dream’s keys, not important-”

“I’d say that’s a very important detail, are you trying to get yourself killed?”

“What, you mean again? Not particularly, now would you shut up man? god you’re worse than Sephora over here”

“Sepho-who?”

“Your little weird box thing”

“You have my comm?”

“Yeah.... I stole that from Dream too”

“Tommy... what the fuck”

“Not important, I’ll tell you more later. Right now I gotta break you out using my awesome new powers”

“You got your powers?!”

“Yeah they’re pretty cool now shut up I need to concentrate. Chat, can you walk me through this please?”

Tommy squeezed his eyes shut as he tried to focus on the voices in his head, trying his best to follow their instructions with how to activate the power he had accidentally stolen from Technoblade. Most of it, according to chat, was all about visualization, so Tommy went back trying to remember exactly what it had looked like when Techno’s ability was active. His brain kept going back to the weird purple glow that had come from Techno’s hands so he focused on that image.

At first, it started out as nothing more than a tingling sensation in his palms, and then it quickly turned into pain that traveled all the way up his arms. When Tommy opened his eyes, his palms were glowing purple, the same way Technoblade’s had been.

Techno was staring, mouth open as he quietly whispered yet again “Tommy... what the fuck”

But Tommy ignored him in favor of pressing his glowing palm against the plate that was controlling the forcefield. He gasped a bit in pain as that same horrible feeling from earlier shot through him and for a second he was scared he was going to die again, slowly and painfully. But then, much to Tommy’s relief, it passed, as the weird plate sparked and then crumbled into ash and the forcefield came down.

Techno stepped out of the cell and Tommy smiled at him “see told you I’d-” he was cut off by Techno suddenly pulling him into a hug “uh you alright there big man?”

“No.” Techno answered as he pulled Tommy closer, hugging him for a moment longer before finally letting go “I’m not, but that’s not important. What’s important is getting you out of here safely”

“Uh yeah okay... Oh also uh Zephifofum wants to talk to you” Tommy said grabbing the box from his pocket and handing it to Techno.

“Who?” Techno frowned in obvious confusion but accepted the box anyway “uh this is Technoblade I’ve got a code 14 and am requesting immediate extraction”

“It’s already on its way, Tech,” Zendaya said.

“Oh! Phil!” Techno exclaimed happily

“Wait” Tommy glared at the box feeling betrayed “your name is PHIL?”

“Well your name is Tommy” Phil replied

Tommy narrowed his eyes “yeah okay fair point,”

“Enough talking, c’mon Tommy we need to go,” Techno said, gently grabbing Tommy’s hand and pulling him towards the nearest exit. As they navigate the halls of the base alarms start sounding off above their head.

“Shit” Techno mumbled as Tommy winced at the too loud noise, the blond pulled his hand away from Techno to try and muffle the sound a bit but it wasn’t working too well. “Tommy? You ok?”

“Too loud” Tommy explained through gritted teeth.

“Shit okay, I’m sorry Tommy I don’t have anything to help block it out right now. You can keep your hands over your ears just stay close to me” Techno said before leading the way through the halls.

As the pair made their way towards the exit they inevitably ran into a few nameless villains that Techno took down easily. He was clearly not having it with this shit anymore because the moment a villain showed their face, Techno shifted into his piglin form and knocked them the fuck out. Finally, the exit was in sight and Tommy couldn’t help but stop and stare through the window in the door at the outside world.

Just beyond that door was grass, trees, the sky, and everything Techno had promised to show him. The Outside was waiting for him, calling for him, but as they got closer and closer to the door, Tommy was struggling to keep up with Techno. His movements were turning sluggish and his vision was blurring, he could hardly keep a grip on his makeshift bag that carried his belongings.

“Tech-” he mumbled, as he stumbled forward almost tripping as blackspots filled his vision
“Techno I can’t-”

Techno was next to him immediately, wrapping an arm around Tommy in an attempt to keep the boy on his feet. “Tommy? What’s wrong? Are you hurt? What’s happening?” he asked, obviously concerned for the fourteen-year-old.

“Tired” Tommy mumbled “sorry Tech I can’t keep- I can’t”

“It’s okay,” Techno said leaning down and picking up Tommy easily, even though Tommy had been eating 3 meals a day fairly consistently for the last month and a half, he still was far too light. “It’s okay kid, I’ve got you. I’ve got us the rest of the way, you did good making it this far. You did good Tommy, now rest”

And Tommy let his eyes shut, leaving the rest of it to Technoblade.

Chapter End Notes

Hey guys! Thanks so much for reading this chapter, as always if you enjoyed please feel free to let me know! Comments are super motivational to me and really encourage me to keep this story going. Also thank you so much for over 700 Kudos! The support I've been getting on this story is just absolutely insane! Also, I have a linktree set up that has links to my twitter and the Spotify playlists I have set up for both stories I'm writing <https://linktr.ee/batmansmom> and if that wasn't enough I also have a discord server! I'm planning on posting some cannon facts about the characters and the universe there that likely won't show up in this story on there! It's also meant to be a place for artists, writers, editors and readers to all come together to enjoy Dream SMP/SBI content together! It's also where you can try and convince me to give our heroes here a happy ending (just kidding, of course, this story already has a planned ending). It's also where I'll be posting updates and announcements so if I'm unable to post a chapter that day that's where you'll know and I was thinking about starting to use it to get opinions on certain details like chapter titles and also whether I should post later in the day or earlier that kind of stuff. So here's the link to that <https://discord.gg/9qM4wBPp> feel free to join, thanks again for reading! Until next time <3

Sunrise

Chapter Summary

“It’s... kind of itchy” Tommy commented softly.

“What is? The grass?” Techno asked, looking down at their feet realizing suddenly that Tommy didn’t have shoes on. “Did you forget your shoes?”

“Maybeeee”

“Tommy!”

“What I was rushing to go rescue your dumb ass” Tommy crossed his arms as Techno laughed next to him.

Chapter Notes

Hey guys! Sorry this chapter was a bit later than it usually is, I decided that in order to write it properly I also needed to experience the Outside. Also to those of you who are writing like your theories and stuff and commenting it y'all have my whole heart I love reading those comments please never stop! You're giving me so many amazing ideas haha! I might not be updating tomorrow, still uncertain on that but I'll be letting my discord know if I decide not too so feel free to join that! Anyways enjoy the chapter! Love you guys <3

See the end of the chapter for more [notes](#)

Techno hadn’t been super surprised when Tommy passed out. Honestly, he was surprised Tommy had even made it as far as he had all things considered. As Techno ran through the exit and away from the base with Tommy in his arms he was thinking two things. The first that he was both frustrated and grateful that Dream had chosen to build his base in the middle of fucking nowhere.

Grateful because after seeing how Tommy had reacted to the alarms, Techno had a feeling that if not given enough time to adjust to the outside world before being thrust into the city of all places, Tommy would become very overwhelmed very quickly. So in terms of Tommy’s first experiences with the outside world, the forest was probably the best place to start. On the other hand, it also meant that until their ride arrived Techno was pretty much on his own against Dream’s entire base of operations which currently houses five of the worst supervillains at the moment. Techno was strong, he could do a lot, he was known for his

fighting ability but he was not stupid enough to think he could take on five supervillains while trying to protect Tommy at the same time.

The second thing he was thinking about was that once again, it felt way too easy. So the first thing Techno did when he decided they were far enough from the base to sit down for a moment was he started looking for trackers that might have been attached to either him or Tommy, along with searching carefully through Tommy's things to make sure trackers weren't placed there either. Techno ended up finding seven trackers this way. Three on him, two on Tommy, two more within the sheet that contained Tommy's things. Once he was certain he had found all of them, the next thing he did was destroy them before picking Tommy back up and moving them away from the area again.

Finally, he stopped once they hit the edge of the forest that had surrounded Dream's base, satisfied they were far enough away and had enough space for a pickup, Techno set Tommy back down, careful as to not lay him down in a way that would crush Clementine, who was still sitting in Tommy's jacket pocket. He pulled out his comm and lifted it up to his mouth.

"Phil?"

"Hey mate, eventful night huh?"

Techno laughed "you could say that it was... it was a lot for sure"

"Are you safe?"

"Yeah"

"And you've sent your cords to Jack?"

"Yeah dad I did"

"Okay... okay, mind explaining to me exactly what happened and who... who this Theseus kid is?"

Techno silently noticed how Phil chose to call Tommy, Theseus despite knowing that wasn't his name.

"I- I don't know that I can tell you everything over comm. There are- There are some things I think that if I'm going to say I'd prefer to say them in person" Techno said trying to shake thoughts of black blood and dead brothers from his head.

"Okay, okay well why don't we start with the kid? Where the fuck did you get a child?"

Techno laughed a little "I uh I met him about two months ago, I was assigned to train him on how to defend himself"

"So Dream's using child soldiers now?"

"No- no not exactly, when he first introduced me to Tommy, he claimed that Tommy was his little brother"

“What?” Phil’s confusion was obvious and understandable, Techno’s reaction to that claim had pretty much been the same. “Wait, you’re saying claimed, do you- do you not think it’s true?”

“No.” Techno cleared his throat “no, it is definitely not true Phil.”

“Where’d he even get a kid from then?”

“I uh-” Techno sighed this really wasn’t the kind of news you delivered over comm. Especially when there was still the chance he and Tommy could get recaptured, really it would be cruel to tell his dad the truth about who Tommy is while they were still both in danger. “I don’t know, what I do know is he’s been keeping Tommy in a basement with no contact with the outside world for the last ten years”

“Oh... Jesus christ well that explains some things” Phil sighed. “Pretty sure he thinks I’m a talking box”

Techno wheezed “HAH boxza is cannon”

“Tech I have no idea what you just said, mate”

“That okay old man, you don’t really need to know. How far out is Jack from our cords?”

“Uh... about six more hours mate, think you can hold out?”

“Who do you think you’re talking to Phil? Technoblade never dies, I’ll be fine.” Techno said into the comm “hey Phil? How much longer until the sun rises?”

“Um... like an hour” he answered “why? Something important about that?”

“Tommy hasn’t seen a sunrise in ten years,” Techno murmured into the comm “I don’t want him to miss it”

“You are really attached to this kid aren’t you?”

“You don’t get it, Phil, Tommy is...” Techno paused the words ‘my brother’ still on his lips but he swallowed them down “he’s something special, you’re going to love him”

“I’m sure I will, he was certainly entertaining if nothing else. He seems like a good kid Tech,” Phil paused as if debating his next words “just don’t forget there’s... a certain danger to him even if it isn’t purposeful. He was raised by Dream after all”

“And he chose me over Dream” Techno argued “trust me, Phil, there is nothing dangerous about Tommy”

Phil sighed “just promise me you’ll be careful around him”

Techno rolled his eyes, “yeah Phil I promise I’ll be careful around the skinny ass 14 year old”

“Tech I sense your eyes rolling from over the comm, I’m being serious! Please I can’t-” Phil cut off “I don’t want to lose you Techno so just promise me. Please.”

“Alright alright Phil, I promise”

“Thank you,”

“You should get some rest Phil,” Techno said after a moment of silence passed between the two “you’re going to need it”

“That’s... ominous-sounding” Phil commented

“Trust me, Phil, you’ll want to be awake when I bring Tommy home”

“Will Hero Commission even let you do that so soon? Especially with the information Tommy might know?”

“Like they could stop me” Techno scoffed. “If they want to interrogate Tommy, they can do so after he gets adjusted to living life outside of a single room. Dream’s already taught Tommy his entire life that heroes were the real villains, we don’t need Eret and the rest of those guys solidifying that idea by treating Tommy like a villain because he had the misfortune of spending most of his life as Dream’s prisoner.”

“I see your point, okay we can keep Commission off of his back for a bit”

“Thank you”

“No problem mate, alright I’m going to go get some sleep. Send an alert once Jack’s arrived ok?”

“Ok Phil, see you soon”

Techno could hear Phil grinning on the other side of the comm as he said “see you soon mate”

The call ended and Techno looked over at Tommy who was still peacefully... sleeping? Unconsciousness and sleeping weren’t exactly the same thing but at least the kid didn’t look like he was about to die. Again. God he really needed to stop thinking about that. Techno sighed to himself and prepared to spend the next hour keeping watch until it was time to wake Tommy up.

Tommy woke up to someone gently shaking his shoulder and something that sounded like a mix of whistling and singing.

“Wha?” he mumbled fighting through the fog of sleepiness in order to open his eyes, to see Techno leaning over him. Which was weird, Tommy never slept so late that Techno had to wake him during a visit. Then Tommy remembered the events of last night, dying, gaining access to his powers, breaking Techno out... the door to the outside.

Tommy shot upright, mouth hanging open as he took in his surroundings. There was- he was lying in grass and around him were trees, so so many trees. He started to look up, wanting to get a proper look at the sky when Techno stopped him.

“Wait wait wait” Techno protested a hand coming up to cover Tommy’s eyes “sorry but I had something in mind for that part. That’s why I woke you up, I didn’t want you to miss it”

“Miss what?” Tommy asked, his own hand coming up trying to impatiently pry Techno’s own hand off of his face.

“Your first sunrise” Techno said, “Promise you’ll keep your eyes closed until I tell you?”

Tommy nodded, shutting his eyes tight as Techno lifted his hand. He could hear Techno chuckling next to him as he stood, pulling Tommy up with him.

“Okay, we have to walk a bit, I want you to have a good view so you’re going to have to trust me,” Techno said, there was more shuffling as Tommy assumed the other picked up Tommy’s make-shift bag.

“Okay” Tommy responded almost immediately “I trust you”

Techno grabbed Tommy’s arm gently and started leading him away from the trees and farther into the field of grass that was spread out beyond them. Tommy laughed a little in pure joy at the feeling of grass under his feet.

“It’s... kind of itchy” Tommy commented softly.

“What is? The grass?” Techno asked, looking down at their feet realizing suddenly that Tommy didn’t have shoes on. “Did you forget your shoes?”

“Maybeeee”

“Tommy!”

“What I was rushing to go rescue your dumb ass” Tommy crossed his arms as Techno laughed next to him.

“Alright well I guess I’ll just add that on the list of things we need to do once we get home”

“What’s the weird whistling?” Tommy asked as they kept walking, not minding one bit that he was barefoot. There was something so freeing about knowing he was walking on grass, that he really was Outside, it was nice having the grass as a reminder that when Tommy opened his eyes he would still be Outside. That this wasn’t some trick his mind was playing on him.

“Those are birds, Tommy,” Techno explained as he guided the younger to the perfect spot to see the sunrise. “They’re chirping”

“It’s pretty...” Tommy murmured “I like it”

“Okay Tommy, you can open your eyes now”

Tommy hesitated for a moment, trying to mentally prepare himself for this moment he had been waiting and hoping for for so long. Then he opened his eyes. Tommy let out a strangled gasp at the sight before him. It was beautiful! The sky was lit up with soft oranges and yellows as the ball of light rose slowly into the beautiful blue expanse above them. Rays of light seemed to reach down and touch the Earth, filtering through something fluffy and white that Tommy assumed were clouds, lighting everything up around them.

“Tommy?” Techno sounded concerned “are you alright?”

Tommy suddenly became very aware that there were tears streaming down his cheeks, but he couldn’t tear his eyes away from the sight in front of him. So instead he nodded and reached a hand out blindly until he was holding onto Techno’s. “Thank you” he murmured meaning those two words more now than he ever had in the past “You kept your promise, thank you”

Techno squeezed his hand “anytime Tommy, anytime”

They stood there in silence, letting Tommy take everything in until finally, the younger looked away, reaching up with his other hand to wipe stray tears from his face.

“C’mon,” Techno said “I have so much more to show you out here before we get picked up”

And Tommy didn’t hesitate to follow after Techno, walking hand in hand as the older led him back to the trees.

“We made it Clem” Tommy whispered to the plant in his pocket “We made it”

Chapter End Notes

Hey guys! Thanks so much for reading this chapter, as always if you enjoyed please feel free to let me know! Comments are super motivational to me and really encourage me to keep this story going. Also thank you so much for over 800 Kudos! The support I've been getting on this story is just absolutely insane! Also, I have a linktree set up that has links to my twitter and the Spotify playlists I have set up for both stories I'm writing <https://linktr.ee/batmansmom> and if that wasn't enough I also have a discord server! I'm planning on posting some cannon facts about the characters and the universe there that likely won't show up in this story on there! It's also meant to be a place for artists, writers, editors and readers to all come together to enjoy Dream SMP/SBI content together! It's also where you can try and convince me to give our heroes here a happy ending (just kidding, of course, this story already has a planned ending). It's also where I'll be posting updates and announcements so if I'm unable to post a chapter that day that's where you'll know and I was thinking about starting to use it to get opinions on certain details like chapter titles and also whether I should post later in the day or earlier that kind of stuff. So here's the link to that <https://discord.gg/9qM4wBPp> feel free to join, thanks again for reading! Until next time <3

You were on a secret mission for a year and a half and all you got me was a traumatized child?

Chapter Summary

“Yeah Tommy, I promise, there are plenty of places we can go where Dream won’t be able to reach you again” Techno said “but in order to get to them, I need you to come with me”

“Into the hell-o-cop-ter?”

“Yeah into the helicopter”

“And I can wear the ear thingies the whole time?”

“The whole time, I promise”

“Okay,” Tommy said taking a deep breath shooting a glare at the helicopter “okay but if this thing kills me I will hate you forever”

Chapter Notes

Me: You know I've been posting this like everyday for over a week, maybe I should take a break

Me:... Naaaah *writes a 5,000 word chapter*

In all seriousness, this chapter took me a while to write since so much happens! So I really hope you enjoy and if you do feel free to leave a comment and let me know what your favorite part was! See you at the end notes!

Content warnings: Mentions of death, mentions of blood, mentions of hospitals, panic attacks

Edit: whoops continuity error

See the end of the chapter for more [notes](#)

Techno used the remaining hours waiting to show Tommy the world around them. He tried to get the child to try and climb a tree but Tommy refused to even consider it.

“I know you said the trees don’t mind” Tommy had said shaking his head “but I can’t talk to trees and really the last thing I want to do is piss one of these giant ones off”

Techno didn’t really understand what Tommy thought would happen if he somehow managed to piss off a tree, but regardless he chose not to argue, instead opting to try and point out some of the wildlife hiding in the forest. This went much better than the attempt at tree climbing although Tommy glared at him whenever they got too close and scared a squirrel or rabbit or sometimes a bird off.

“It’s your loud ass footsteps,” Tommy had complained “It’s scaring them and really I can’t say I blame them for being scared”

“Are you scared of me Tommy?” Techno asked, frowning a bit.

“Of course not” Tommy dismissed “because I am a big man who fears nothing. Moving on!”

Eventually, Tommy got bored of trying to find skittish animals and instead decided to turn into a walking, talking plant encyclopedia.

“Did you know dandelions are edible?” Tommy said as he picked one from the ground.

“Uh, are you sure?” Techno asked.

“Pretty sure” Tommy answered before sticking the whole flower in his mouth “we’ll find out for sure within like an hour,” he said through a mouthful of dandelion.

“That is not how we test whether or not things are edible!” Techno said in alarm “Tommy spit it out!”

“No!”

“Spit. it. Out”

“It’s fuckin good leave me alone”

“Toooooommyyy” Techno groaned glaring at the blond “we need to work on your self-preservation instinct... and your impulse control”

“Oh please it’s fine Blade I’m only messing with you, I had dandelion greens all the time in salads and whatever else they’d give me. Just never the flower” Tommy shrugged “It’s fine, it’s edible. If there’s one thing I know about its plants”

“Why am I taking you with me again?” Techno asked with a sigh.

“Uh because I saved your ass and busted you out of prison,” Tommy said “I don’t know big man, only you know that answer”

Techno, in spite of himself, smiled just a little “come on child I’m sure there are plenty more plants you could tell me about”

And Techno found he didn't mind at all listening as Tommy stated fact after fact about the trees and plants and bushes they found on the edge of the forest. Unfortunately, it couldn't last, as Techno's comm beeped announcing that Jack would be arriving fairly soon with the helicopter.

"Come on, our ride is almost here," Techno said, leading Tommy back to the field of grass they had watched the sunrise from.

"Ride?" Tommy frowned "what kind of ride"

"The commission sent a helicopter" Techno explained and then looked at the confusion on Tommy's face and realized he hadn't really explained anything as the boy did not know what that was. "Which is a machine, like the treadmill, except much bigger and it can fly"

"It can fly?" Tommy asked skeptically "right sure it can Technoblade, what is it a giant bird?"

"No it uh... okay so basically it has these blades that rotate really quickly attached to the top of the helicopter and I'm pretty sure that like gets it in the air and keeps it there" he tried elaborate but based on Tommy's disbelieving look, he wasn't doing a good job at convincing the younger that it really was a flying machine. "That's alright, you'll see it in a few minutes here."

They sat together in the grassy field waiting for the helicopter to arrive, Tommy kept picking pieces of grass and chucking them at Techno, who in response was grabbing handfuls and chucking them right back. The grass fight paused when Techno perked up at the sound of the helicopter approaching. Tommy frowned at the noise.

"Techno? What's that sound?"

"It's the helicopter, just like I told you"

"Are you sure a helicopter isn't just another name for some big monster coming to kill us?" Tommy asked, trying to make it sound like a joke but Techno could hear the underlying nervousness in Tommy's voice.

"It's alright Tommy, I promise it's just the helicopter, nothing that will hurt you." Techno tried to reassure the younger boy but as the noise got louder and louder as it approached, Techno realized that Tommy was starting to panic. It was then that Techno realized he had forgotten a very important detail about helicopters, that they are loud as fuck and that Tommy hadn't handled it well when they last ran into a loud noise and that alarm wasn't as nearly as intense as the helicopter.

Tommy clapped his hands over his ears as the vehicle got closer to their location and Techno didn't hesitate to put his hands over Tommy's in an attempt to help block out the noise. Techno could see the moment it all started to overwhelm Tommy as the helicopter hovered above the field looking for a place to land. Tommy's chest started heaving as if he was

struggling to breathe and his pupils were blown in full panic. Techno couldn't do much but pull Tommy closer and try to muffle the sound as much as possible.

Eventually, Jack stopped the helicopter and hopped out running over to where Techno and Tommy were kneeling in the grass.

"Are you alright?" the blazeborn asked as he approached, clearly concerned with the fact that Techno had made no move towards the helicopter.

Instead of answering Techno just asked, "do you have any noise-canceling headphones?"

"Uhh yeah yeah I do, I'll go grab them," Jack said running back towards the helicopter.

As they waited, Techno lifted his hands off of Tommy's and tried to give the other a reassuring smile "it's alright Tommy, you're okay, I'm sorry that scared you I should have warned you that it was going to get loud, that's on me" Techno said keeping his voice calm and friendly, he wasn't sure how well Tommy could hear him (or not at this point but he kept talking anyway "It's going to be okay, it's almost over, I'm sorry Tommy, I'm so-) but regardless he did his best to calm the other down as much as he could until Jack came back with the headphones.

Once he had the headphones, Techno gently tapped Tommy's shoulder until he knew he had the other's attention. "These will help," he said, "you put them over your ears, they'll block out the sound."

But Tommy just held his hands to his ears tighter and shook his head clearly too scared to let go long enough to slip the headphones on.

"Okay that's okay, I'll help you" Techno murmured, pushing the headphones apart and positioning them so they were right above Tommy's ears "okay ready?" Tommy nodded hesitantly "okay one two three" on three Tommy moved his hands away from his ears and Techno snapped the headphones on blocking out all of the noise around them.

The look of relief on Tommy's face was instant as he sagged, seeming exhausted. Techno relaxed a bit seeing the look of panic disappear from Tommy's face, he turned to Jack.

"Hullo"

"Uh... hi"

It took another half an hour to convince Tommy to get into the helicopter.

"You can wear those headphones the whole time" Techno reassured him "you won't hear a thing. I know you're scared, you have every right to be, but we can't stay here. Dream is still searching for us, so we need to leave and go where we'll be safe"

"Are there really places that are safe from Dream?" Tommy asked, he had the headphones hanging around his neck as the helicopter was off, and Techno really didn't want to think

about the fact that Tommy didn't know that rescuing Techno and getting out of the base could mean getting away from Dream forever. That Tommy thought this was just a temporary thing and that Dream would catch up to them eventually. He really didn't want to think about that.

"Yeah Tommy, I promise, there are plenty of places we can go where Dream won't be able to reach you again," Techno said "but in order to get to them, I need you to come with me"

"Into the hell-o-cop-ter?"

"Yeah into the helicopter"

"And I can wear the ear thingies the whole time?"

"The whole time, I promise"

"Okay," Tommy said taking a deep breath shooting a glare at the helicopter "okay but if this thing kills me I will hate you forever"

"That seems fair to me" Techno nodded, offering a hand to Tommy, who glared at him for a moment but ended up taking it anyway. Techno led the way over to the helicopter and helped Tommy climb inside before following after him. Tommy placed the headphones firmly back on as Techno reached over and strapped him in before strapping himself in. Once they were both secured he gave Jack a thumbs up and they were off.

As soon as the copter started, Tommy was grabbing his hand again and holding on tightly, very obviously afraid as they lifted up into the air. Techno tried not to laugh at the frightened look on Tommy's face and instead just squeezed Tommy's hand every once in a while in a silent attempt to reassure him.

"So where to? Going straight home?" Jack asked, talking loudly over the sound of the helicopter so Techno could hear. They only had two sets of the soundproof headphones and while Jack had offered his pair to Techno, Techno had just waved him off saying he'd be fine without them. Now Techno wonders if maybe he should have just taken them, as of right now they were just hanging around Jack's neck rather than being used.

"No, I was hoping we could swing by Sam's first," Techno shouted back.

"Sam's? What for? Are you injured?"

"No, but Tommy might be"

"Can't you just bring the kid to a normal hospital?"

"Not for this." Techno shook his head.

"Why? What happened"

Techno hesitated "I'll explain it more in detail once a debriefing is set up but uh Dream's power? It revives dead people and he uh he chose to use Tommy ("The lesson?" Techno

repeated, tearing his eyes away from Tommy's body for a moment to look at the masked villain "you mean that wasn't it?") as the example"

Jack's face paled considerably at that "this kid was dead? Holy shit, yeah okay that definitely warrants a visit to Sam" Jack agreed "will you be wanting the helicopter after to fly you over to Phil's?"

"Uh" Techno glanced over at Tommy who didn't have any clue as to what they were talking about. He took one look at the child's terrified face and shook his head "no we'll find some other way home" he decided.

Jack nodded "yeah that's probably a good idea" he agreed.

Around three hours into the flight, Tommy finally relaxed enough to where he had fallen asleep, tucked safely under Techno's arm. Using his free hand, Techno pulled out his comm and sent a quick message to Wilbur and Phil.

Techno: 'About three hours away now, we're swinging by Sam's first though.'

Wilbur: 'what? Why? Are you hurt?'

Techno: 'no, Dream had a hostage and they might need medical care'

Wilbur: 'and they're injured enough that you can't take them to a normal hospital?'

Techno: 'yeah trust me Wil, no normal hospital will be able to help with this. Any chance you can pick us up after?'

Wilbur: 'I'm confused, is the hostage coming to live with us? I did not agree to having a roommate'

Techno hesitated for a moment trying to come up with a realistic reason as to why Tommy had to come home with him. One that didn't give away who Tommy (is... no. NO. That's- that's not possible. Wilbur saw him die, ten years ago, he- he bled out in Wil's arms. ExDee cut his throat, Wilbur felt it when his heart-) was just yet.

Techno: 'they need to be in protective custody and since they already know me I figured this would be the best solution for them'

Wilbur: 'Dream must really have it out for them if the best solution is risking our identities to protect some random civilian'

Techno: 'Wilbur you have no idea.'

Wilbur: '... alright I'll go get the guest room prepared then, see you in a bit'

Techno decided to wake Tommy up before they landed at Sam's, he figured it would be better to be awake during the landing than waking up because of the landing. Although the terrified look on Tommy's face didn't falter throughout their whole descent.

When they finally landed on Sam's roof, Techno turned to Jack "mind if we keep the headphones?" he asked "I can pay you back"

"Nah don't worry about it, I'll just have commission get me new ones. Maybe four instead of just two this time. That would be nice" Jack mused "alright I uh I told Sam ahead of time that you were coming, so he's probably waiting for you on floor 12"

"Right, thanks Jack for the pickup," Techno said, giving an awkward wave as he undid the seatbelts on both himself and Tommy before leading the younger over to exit the helicopter.

"Anytime, it was good to see you again!" Jack grinned, returning the wave as Techno hopped out of the helicopter with ease with Tommy not far behind him.

The blond hesitated for a moment and then waved at Jack shouting "thank you!" which seemed to catch Jack off guard before he smiled at Tommy and gave him a thumbs up. With that, Techno led Tommy over to the stairs going down a floor so they could get access to the elevator.

Tommy hesitantly took the headphones off as he frowned at the metal doors that would open when the elevator got there.

Sensing there was going to be a lot of confusion during this part of their trip Techno turned to Tommy "there is going to be a lot of stuff that you aren't going to know about or recognize, stuff like the helicopter and the treadmill. I'm not going to be able to explain all of it, some of it is just beyond me but I promise that none of it is going to hurt you. If you start feeling overwhelmed by any of it you can just put the headphones on or tap my hand twice so I know we gotta hurry it up. Okay?"

"Yeah whatever I'll be fine" Tommy shrugged "can we just go in already," he said gesturing to the elevator doors.

"We gotta wait, it's an elevator, it moves up and down and it will take you to different floors the same way stairs do but the elevator does all the moving for you" Techno explained and Tommy frowned a bit.

"That's weird, why not just take the stairs?"

"Well in this case, we'd be climbing down 61 flights of stairs"

"Oh"

"Yeah..."

Just then the elevator dinged and the doors opened much to Tommy's surprise. Techno walked right in, making sure the doors stayed open while Tommy looked inside the elevator not yet stepping in.

“It’s umm it’s really small” Tommy noted “it’s just a metal box”

“Yeah it is but we won’t be in here for very long,” Techno said “it’ll be quick a few minutes at most”

Tommy reluctantly entered the elevator reaching over and taking Techno’s hand again as his eyes darted around from wall to wall. “Okay well lets just get this over with ” Tommy mumbled.

Techno nodded and pressed the button for floor 12, Tommy held onto his hand a bit tighter when the elevator shook and then started its descent. They were about halfway down when Techno noticed that Tommy was shaking.

“Tommy? You okay?”

“It’s- I’m alright big man it’s just a bit small is all barely feel like I’ve got enough room to breathe in here,” Tommy said shakily.

‘Okay,’ Techno thought to himself ‘adding small spaces to the list of things to avoid with Tommy’

“It’s alright Tommy it’s almost over” Techno murmured trying to just keep the young boy calm enough to last through the rest of the way down.

The moment the elevator doors opened, Tommy let go of Techno’s hand and flung himself out of the elevator.

“Please never make me do that again” Tommy mumbled glaring at the elevator like it was evil.

“Alright Tommy, we don’t have to use it again today” Techno sighed, he was not looking forward to the number of flights of stairs he would be climbing today but that was alright, better to be a bit tired than for Tommy to have a panic attack. God knows today would be stressful enough without the addition of an elevator-related panic attack. “C’mon, a... friend of mine is waiting for us,” he said, leading the way through the sliding glass doors into Sam’s lab. He glanced back at Tommy and couldn’t help but smile at the amazed look on the boy’s face.

It was a pretty amazing sight, there were drones flying around with parts and tools, interactive holograms of Sam’s latest projects, screens showing percentages, and running complicated equations that Techno couldn’t even begin to decipher. In the center of the chaos was Sam himself, or as he was known to the public, Nook. He was still mostly suited up, his body covered in purple shimmering armor but his usual mask was missing as he turned to see Techno and Tommy standing in the entrance of the lab.

“Techno” Sam greeted stepping off of the platform and waving his hand deactivating most of the holograms. “Jack told me you were coming, who’s your friend?” he asked, giving Tommy a small smile, although Techno could see the way Sam had tensed in apprehension. Tommy

might be a child, but even children could be dangerous, he couldn't blame the hero for being cautious.

"This is Tommy," Techno explained "he uh... I was wondering if you could do a quick scan of him, just to make sure nothings wrong"

Sam frowned a bit "and going to a hospital wouldn't have sufficed? You know I'm always willing to help you out Techno but-"

"Trust me Sam this is way above what a hospital could help me with" Techno interrupted setting a hand gently on Tommy's shoulder "Tommy he (held his little brother close to his chest, trying to ignore how his vision blurred with unshed tears "I'm so sorry, I should have prioritized getting you out of here, I should have taken you and run, I'm so sorry Tommy") uh..."

"I died" Tommy interjected "like twice within the last few days"

"Oh," Sam said, eyes wide as he processed that information "okay... yeah I can see why you uh came to me. Okay, I'll just have a drone grab the scanner" Same nodded awkwardly, tapping the screen on his wrist and sending the command, almost instantly a drone flew past their heads over to the tech vault.

"Those flying things are cool," Tommy said pointing at the drones "they seem kinda like the hell-o-cop-ter but quieter, and cooler"

"Yeah those are drones, I made them myself," Sam said with a small smile "they fly using the same sort of idea as the helicopter."

"That's cool" Tommy nodded "what's with the weird glowing rectangle thing? The ones with all the numbers?" Tommy asked, pointing at one of the several screens in Sam's lab.

"You mean the monitor? It's just running some calculations involving my latest project" Sam said with a shrug "unfortunately the details on that one are still top secret so I can't explain much more than that"

"Okay, but how does the monitor thing work? Like how is it glowing and why are the things inside it moving?" Tommy asked.

Sam paused for a moment "Well the numbers aren't like physically inside of the monitor, you know that right? It's just a picture"

"Well yeah but it's moving" Tommy frowned.

Sam looked at Techno with a confused expression but seeing that Techno didn't seem surprised or alarmed by Tommy's questions or his confusion he turned back to the child.

"Tommy, have you not seen this kind of stuff before? Screens and uh moving pictures?"

Tommy shook his head "there wasn't anything about it in any of my books, the treadmill had numbers that changed but that was because there were little lights under the glass that turned on and off to form certain numbers."

“Right” Sam nodded a bit looking lost “well, if you want I can explain some of these things and how they work a bit later, for now, though I think it’s best that we focus on why you’re here”

“For the scan thing?”

“Yes,” Sam said as the drone came back with the med scanner “for the scan thing, now Tommy what we’re going to do is you are going to stay as still as possible and I’m going to wave this” sam held up the scanner “over you and what that’s going to do is it’s going to scan you to see if it can find any injuries or anything... out of the ordinary. If it finds something it’ll tell me and we’ll look at it and go from there. Sound okay?”

“It’s not going to hurt me is it?” Tommy asked narrowing his eyes at the med scanner apprehensively “because if it’s going to hurt then I don’t want to”

Sam smiled a bit amused “no, it won’t hurt. It’ll glow a bit but it won’t hurt. Ready?” Sam asked, turning the scanner on and walking closer to Tommy. Once the blond nodded Sam started the process of running the scanner over Tommy’s body, trying to go as quickly as he could. The scanner glowed white (that transferred down to Dream’s hand’s too. He placed his hand on Tommy’s head and Techno watched as the effects of wither were cleared from Tommy’s body-) as it passed over the back of Tommy’s neck and Sam paused for a moment before finishing the rest of the scan. “And we’re all done,” he said giving the fourteen-year-old a reassuring smile “now I need to talk to Technoblade about some things so why don’t I call up Puffy to give you a tour of the lab while we-”

“What’s wrong with me?” Tommy interrupted “you don’t need to use any of those stupid excuses, you’re trying to get me to leave because there’s something wrong and you don’t want me to know. Well there’s no need for that I’m not a child so just tell me” Tommy said crossing his arms. Sam looked over at Technoblade for confirmation and Techno just sighed.

“If he wants to know he can know” Techno decided, Tommy had spent his whole life being sheltered from the truth. If the kid wanted to know Techno wasn’t going to stop him.

Sam looked skeptical but he sighed “okay,” he gave in and pulled Tommy’s scan up on one of the hologram projectors. “So, for the most part, he seems pretty healthy. Little malnourished, a little dehydrated but pretty good for a kid who died twice recently. The part that worries me is this,” Sam said zooming in on the back of Tommy’s neck, right over where the smiley face was. “Someone’s ability is still active right here and it isn’t Tommy’s. If it’s a villain’s then it’s got one hell of a range and I can’t decipher exactly what the effect is at the moment. It could be anything from a tracker to...”

“To what?” Techno asked, narrowing his eyes.

“It could be what’s keeping Tommy alive at the moment” Sam answered “so there’s a possibility that if that power deactivates-”

“That I’ll die again?” Tommy interrupts looking far too calm about the idea of Techno’s taste.

“Yes,” Sam nodded “though I don’t know that for sure-”

“How do you find out for sure?” Techno interrupted.

“That would likely be a job for chat, as I don’t have any tech that can do that just yet” Sam sighed “I’m sorry there isn’t much I can tell you right now, but uh on the good side there didn’t seem to be any lasting effects of being dead?”

“Right, thanks Sam,” Techno said, trying to hide his frustration with the situation. It wasn’t exactly Sam’s fault that he didn’t have the tech to give him the answers he wanted but still Techno just wanted Tommy to finally, finally be safe. And it was starting to feel like this might never be an option for Tommy, that there’d always be something hanging over their heads waiting to fall. Without another word, Techno grabbed Tommy’s hand “c’mon we need to head home”

“What? Uh okay um thank you, Sam!” Tommy called back to the creeper hybrid.

“Anytime, Tommy, if you have any questions about anything technology related you can always pay a visit to the lab! I’d be happy to explain things” Sam said, giving Tommy a small smile before Techno pulled the kid through the doors of the lab.

Sam sighed watching them go, wishing he could have helped more.

Techno texted Wilbur through his comm asking for Wil to send the car around so he could finally just take Tommy home.

“Techno, it’s really not that big of a deal” Tommy was saying, which just made Techno feel worse “if I die, I die, it’s not really something we can control”

“No Tommy you don’t understand” Techno sighed “I- you were supposed to be safe here, taking you away from Dream was supposed to mean that you could finally, finally be safe. And I can’t-” (Tommy whimpered as he stumbled back, black blood started seeping slowly from his nose and ears and as Wither took full effect, the only thing Techno could hear was Tommy’s screaming as George’s powers-) “I don’t want you to die again, Tommy. So it is a big deal.”

Tommy was still looking at him in a way that Techno had come to learn meant he didn’t understand but Tommy dropped the topic regardless. Techno found himself grateful for that as they walked down the twelve flights of stairs before finally reaching the first level. Tommy had been waiting for him at the bottom, having decided that instead of walking down all those stairs, he was going to put his training to use and simply glide down.

As they approached the door that would lead them out of Sam’s tower and into the city, Techno was relieved to see a familiar silver car waiting for them. He stopped in front of the door and turned to Tommy.

“Okay, we are about to get in a car, which is a vehicle like the helicopter. We’re also in a city right now, which means it’s very big, very chaotic, and full of people. Remember what I said

if you get overwhelmed and if the car is starting to feel like it's too small just let me know and I'll roll down the windows" Techno told him and Tommy just nodded.

"Where are we going this time?" he asked quietly.

"This time, we're going home." Techno said with a small smile "and you'll get to meet my family"

Tommy perked up a little at the mention of Techno's family, which made Techno smile more. This was going to be the best fucking family reunion ever. With that in mind, he guided Tommy over to the car and climbed in.

It didn't take long for them to get to the apartment complex where Techno and his family lived. It was only a fifteen-minute drive, luckily Tommy didn't seem to have a problem with the car, though he was just as fascinated with it as he had been the monitors. Technoblade sighed though when they got out and went over to the stairs, he wasn't excited to climb up another forty flights, but he didn't want to suggest the elevator. He wanted Tommy to be as calm as possible when he finally got to meet Phil and Wilbur again. Especially because he was about to drop a big bombshell on both of them, he didn't need all of his family members panicking.

Together this time, Techno and Tommy climbed up the stairs, stopping every five flights or so so they could catch their breath before continuing up. Finally, they reached the floor where Techno's family lived and Techno guided Tommy over to the front door of the apartment.

"Are you ready?" Techno asked, looking at Tommy, once the boy nodded, Techno grabbed the spare key from under the mat and unlocked the door, stepping in he announced "i'm home!" Fighting to keep a grin off of his face when he heard two doors slam open in response.

"Techno!" Wilbur cheered, a blur of brown and yellow as he barreled into the piglin hybrid.

"Hi Wilbur" Techno laughed, hugging his brother back.

"Really that's all you have to say? 'Hi Wilbur' like you haven't been gone for over a year" Wilbur protested although when he pulled away, Techno could see the grin on his face. "Phil-" Wilbur paused when he turned to see his dad, staring at the doorway "Phil?"

But Phil didn't respond to busy staring at the fourteen-year-old who was still standing awkwardly just in the doorway.

"Uh hi" Tommy said shyly "I'm um I'm Tommy, I've heard a lot about you"

Hey guys! Thanks so much for reading this chapter, as always if you enjoyed please feel free to let me know! Comments are super motivational to me and really encourage me to keep this story going. Also thank you so much for over 900 Kudos and 10,000 hits! The support I've been getting on this story is just absolutely insane! Also, I have a linktree set up that has links to my twitter and the Spotify playlists I have set up for both stories I'm writing <https://linktr.ee/batmansmom> and if that wasn't enough I also have a discord server! I'm planning on posting some cannon facts about the characters and the universe there that likely won't show up in this story on there! It's also meant to be a place for artists, writers, editors and readers to all come together to enjoy Dream SMP/SBI content together! It's also where you can try and convince me to give our heroes here a happy ending (just kidding, of course, this story already has a planned ending). It's also where I'll be posting updates and announcements so if I'm unable to post a chapter that day that's where you'll know and I was thinking about starting to use it to get opinions on certain details like chapter titles and also whether I should post later in the day or earlier that kind of stuff. So here's the link to that <https://discord.gg/9qM4wBPp> feel free to join, thanks again for reading! Until next time <3

Welcome Home

Chapter Summary

“And I’m Wilbur, nice to meet you Thomas” Wilbur said with a cheeky grin.

Tommy frowned “it’s Tommy” he corrected

“Tom?”

“No. Tommy”

“Toms?”

“No! Tommy” the blond insisted

Chapter Notes

Sorry for not updating yesterday! I was in a car for like seven hours and I was just way too tired to try and type out this chapter. But i'm back! Anyway here's the new chapter, I'll see you at the end notes!

Edit: I forgot the content warnings! AH I'M SO SORRY!

CW: death, blood, violence

See the end of the chapter for more [notes](#)

Phil still remembers the last time he saw his youngest son. ExDee had been spotted in L’manburg and it was all hands on deck to take the villain down. Phil at the time had been living in one of the suburbs surrounding the city, with his two sons who he had adopted only a year ago.

He pulled both his sons, Wilbur who had just turned thirteen, and Tommy who was only four, into a hug murmuring “take care of each other, Wilbur if anything happens you take Tommy and you hide in the basement until I get back”

“And you will come back, right?” Wilbur asked quietly.

“I will come back,” Phil reassured pulling sons a bit closer “I will always come back for you two, I promise”

Phil remembered waiting for hours for the villain to make his move before the news came in that several of the smaller towns south of L'manberg had been ravaged by the villain.

"I heard Hartlan is just completely destroyed, " his partner at the time, a hero known as The Captain, told him quietly.

Phil paled and unfolded his wings "I need to go"

"Wait- where are you going? We're meant to hold here in case-"

"I live in Hartlan" Phil said hating the fear and desperation in his voice "my sons-" he cut himself off as he got ready to take off.

"Oh shit ok go go go"

Phil was off the ground before her second word, flying as fast as he could towards home, towards his sons.

Phil remembered the horror that filled him when he saw the wreckage of what had been their home. There was practically nothing left just concrete and rubble and-

"WILBUR!" Phil shouted as he landed running towards the thirteen-year-old who was kneeling in the rubble of their home.

The brunette looked up and Phil gasped at the sight of his son. His arms and chest were covered in blood and there were tears streaming down his face.

"Wilbur, what happened? Where are you hurt?" Phil asked, starting to look for injuries.

"It's not mine" Wilbur choked out as a new wave of tears started.

"What-"

"It's not mine, it's Tommy's"

Phil's heart stopped for a moment as the teenager sobbed "Wilbur, where's Tommy?" the boy didn't answer just held his arms closer to his chest "Wilbur-"

"ExDee killed him" Wilbur sobbed "he- I tried, I was trying to get us to the basement after- but there was something blocking the door and he showed up-"

"Wil-"

"I'm sorry dad, I couldn't save him- I couldn't-" Phil bit down his own sobs and pulled his son closer.

Phil remembers searching through the wreckage, trying to find anything salvageable, trying to find- trying to find his son's body so they could at least give him a proper burial. But there was nothing to find, and Phil wasn't sure if he was relieved or not that he would never have to see the dead body of his four-year-old son.

Phil remembers standing next to Wilbur as they buried an empty casket, the only thing they had left of Tommy hanging around their necks on delicate chains. The only thing Phil had found when searching for his son. Two small bright red feathers that must have been knocked from Tommy's wings at some point.

Phil remembers, nearly a year later, stabbing his sword through ExDee's chest telling the villain "this is for my son" and not understanding why the villain had laughed while he died.

Ten years after his son died, Phil talked to a young boy who claimed his name was Theseus. The boy was anxious, he had only just realized he had powers and yet, he was determined to go and save Phil's other son, Technoblade, from the worst supervillain on the planet. Looking back on it, Phil felt a bit ashamed that in his panic he had allowed this child to risk his life. But his plan had worked and he had found Techno and Phil heard as the two bickered as Theseus worked to free Techno.

Phil's heart had ached when he heard Techno call the child Tommy and he couldn't help but wonder if in another life, if his Tommy would have bickered with Techno like this.

Phil had been surprised though when Techno insisted on bringing Theseus (Tommy) home. Techno didn't have the best track record with people. ("You don't get it Phil, Tommy is..." Techno paused "he's something special, you're going to love him")

So Phil went along with it, if Techno was insisting on bringing the boy back to their apartment then Phil wouldn't stop him. After all, Theseus (Tommy) had saved his son's life (and Phil really didn't think he could have survived losing another one).

He waited, a bit impatiently, for his son (and Theseus) to come home for the first time in a year and a half. When the front door opened and Techno called out to announce his arrival, Phil wasn't ashamed at all to say he had run from his room to go and greet him. Wilbur had gotten there first, because of course he did, damn avian genes, and Phil paused when he saw the child standing just in the doorway watching as Techno hugged his brother.

It was like every parental instinct he had, elytrian or otherwise, started screaming at once.

'Flock' his brain insisted 'flock is home, chick is back'

Phil looked over the child in front of him and he knew it was true. Even though the boy was fourteen now, with blond hair and blue eyes instead of brown, that was Tommy. That was his Tommy, his son. He was here and Phil wasn't sure if he cared that that was impossible.

Tommy (his Tommy) had noticed his staring as well as his sons.

"Phil?" Wilbur asked, looking between him and Tommy with obvious confusion as the child took another step into the house.

"Uh hi" Tommy said shyly "I'm um I'm Tommy, I've heard a lot about you"

“Hi Tommy,” Phil responded, tone soft and soothing “I’m Phil, it’s uh it’s nice to finally meet you” he glanced over at his sons, Techno was smiling in a way that told Phil he knew exactly what was going on. He knew exactly who Tommy was. Wilbur’s expression has dropped a bit at the name Tommy but he clearly didn’t know, didn’t recognize that this child standing in their apartment was really his younger brother.

“Oh!” Tommy exclaimed recognition in his eyes and Phil dared to hope for a moment that maybe his son remembered him, recognized him- “you’re the box!”

Phil laughed awkwardly trying not to let his disappointment show “I talked to you through the box, yes, but I was not the actual box”

“Oh,” Tommy paused before hesitantly saying “well... I’m glad you got out of the box Big Man”

“I-” Phil sighed ignoring his son's snickering behind him “thank you Tommy” he decided to say, not really wanting to explain exactly how a comm worked at this exact moment.

Wilbur walked over to the blond and Phil couldn’t help but smile seeing the two brothers interacting again for the first time in ten years, even if neither of them seemed to realize it just yet.

“And I’m Wilbur, nice to meet you, Thomas,” Wilbur said with a cheeky grin.

Tommy frowned “it’s Tommy” he corrected

“Tom?”

“No. Tommy”

“Toms?”

“No! Tommy” the blond insisted

“Ok ok how about a compromise, I’ll just call you child” Wilbur stated the grin still on his face though Phil knew why Wilbur was avoiding saying Tommy’s preferred name and it wasn’t just to irritate the teenager in front of them.

“I am not a child” Tommy insisted and Wilbur just snickered.

“Whatever you say, child”

“You bi-”

“Okay” Phil interrupted “Tommy, why don’t I show you to your room?”

He saw the boy tense slightly at the words before sighing “okay” he agreed “oh but uh first” he said marching over to Techno and pulling out... was that a plant? Why did he just have a plant in his pocket? “Will you find Clementine a new pot? With some dirt in it?” he asked, carefully handing the plant over to Techno who took it just as carefully.

“Sure Tommy, are you going to want her in your room?” Techno asked completely unfazed even as his brother and father stared at the interaction in confusion.

“Yes please” the fourteen-year-old nodded before turning back to Phil “okay, I’m ready now”

Phil wasn’t sure why the child had said it like it was some kind of prison sentence instead of Phil just showing him to his room but regardless Phil offered Tommy a small smile. “Okay uh the guest bedroom is this way”

Once he got Tommy settled in, he returned to the living room where Techno was placing the plant into one of Phil’s spare pots.

“Are you still using the balcony to garden?” Techno asked though he didn’t look up from what he was doing.

“Yeah, there’s a bag of dirt in the supply closet” Phil answered and Techno nodded going towards the closet with the pot in hand “we need to talk about this Techno”

“I know, we will,” Techno said, opening the bag and grabbing the small scooper inside to start placing dirt into the pot. “Just let me do this first, Tommy’s very attached to Clementine and this is all very new to him.”

“Okay, well finish with... Clementine and then meet Wilbur and I in my office ok?” Phil said waiting for Techno to nod in agreement before walking away and grabbing Wilbur “c’mon Techno’s going to explain some things”

“Is this about the child?” Wilbur asked Phil without hesitation.

“Yeah, yeah it is” Phil said as they walked into his office, shutting the door behind them. Techno got there a few minutes later and sighed.

“So, where should I start?” Techno asked.

Tommy sighed as he looked around his new room, he wasn’t sure why but he thought that by going with Techno it meant that he wouldn’t be confined to just one room again.

‘Oh well,’ Tommy thought to himself ‘at least it’s bigger than the last one, it even has windows!’

As he explored the room he found the door to the bathroom and also a door to a much smaller room with a bar that went across the top of it.

“Huh, that’s weird,” Tommy said out loud “it’s kind of cool that there’s another room but it’s very small.”

Next, he took inventory of what was in the room, he was glad to see there was a desk and a bookshelf so he had places to put his things. Then there was the bed, which was much bigger than his old one which meant there was plenty of room to hide things underneath. There was

also another set of shelves under one of the windows which confused Tommy. Who needed that much storage in one room? How many things do these people expect him to own?

With the room thoroughly explored he turned his attention to the fitted sheet he had thrown his things into, he was in the middle of pulling it all out when there was a knock on his door. He froze, shoving his things under his bed, and waited for the door to open. But there was just another knock.

“Hey, Tommy?” Techno called from the other side of the door “I’ve got clementine, can I come in?”

Tommy frowned a bit confused by the question, Techno hadn’t hesitated to just enter when Tommy was in the other room. Maybe this was a new rule?

“Uh sure?” Tommy said after a moment when he realized the other was waiting for an answer. The door to his room swung open after he confirmed that Techno could enter and Techno stepped into the room.

“Here,” he said, handing over Clementine who was finally back in a pot, he glanced around Tommy’s room “so what do you think so far?”

“Well... it uh bigger than my old one” Tommy answered honestly “it’s a very nice room, thank you” he added on remembering Dream’s rules about how he was meant to respond when he received something new.

“That’s good” Techno smiled at him and Tommy’s chest felt warm with pride, he had done something good “I’m glad you’re adjusting if you need anything you can just ask me or Phil, or Wilbur too I guess but he’s kind of an ass”

Tommy laughed a little, finding himself relaxing. He had been kind of worried that with the new room, Techno might start acting differently. But Techno was still joking around with him, still being just as nice as he was before.

“Okay, well I’m gonna leave you to get settled, I need to talk to Phil and Wilbur but I’ll come to get you in a bit for lunch. Sound ok?”

“Yes” Tommy nodded “thank you for getting Clementine a new pot” he added holding the plant closer to his chest.

“You’re welcome Tommy, I’ll see you in a bit” Techno smiled before leaving the room, shutting the door behind him. Tommy stared longingly at the door, it had been nice while it lasted, and who knows, maybe if Tommy is good Techno will let him walk around outside of his room or maybe open a window! With that in mind, he set Clementine down on the shelf near the window and started unpacking his things.

Hey guys! Thanks so much for reading this chapter, as always if you enjoyed please feel free to let me know! Comments are super motivational to me and really encourage me to keep this story going. Also thank you so much for over 1000 Kudos and 12,000 hits! The support I've been getting on this story is just absolutely insane! Also, I have a linktree set up that has links to my twitter and the Spotify playlists I have set up for both stories I'm writing <https://linktr.ee/batmansmom> and if that wasn't enough I also have a discord server! I'm planning on posting some cannon facts about the characters and the universe there that likely won't show up in this story on there! It's also meant to be a place for artists, writers, editors and readers to all come together to enjoy Dream SMP/SBI content together! It's also where you can try and convince me to give our heroes here a happy ending (just kidding, of course, this story already has a planned ending). It's also where I'll be posting updates and announcements so if I'm unable to post a chapter that day that's where you'll know and I was thinking about starting to use it to get opinions on certain details like chapter titles and also whether I should post later in the day or earlier that kind of stuff. So here's the link to that <https://discord.gg/FqKxYJDk> feel free to join, thanks again for reading! Until next time <3

Confessions and Misunderstandings

Chapter Summary

“Hi” Tommy greeted, hugging Clementine closer to his chest, Wilbur had seemed okay when they had met earlier, but he wasn’t sure that he could trust the taller male.

“Hullo” Techno responded and Wilbur just gave him a wave as he looked around Tommy’s room. “We came to grab you for lunch, did you want to eat in here or in the kitchen?”

Tommy’s eyes widened a bit “I can do that?” he asked quietly.

Chapter Notes

DOUBLE UPDATE DOUBLE UPDATE DOUBLE UPDATE

CW: mentions of death, blood, trauma, malnourishment uhh I think that's it

See the end of the chapter for more [notes](#)

Techno sighed as he left Tommy’s room, he wasn’t sure he was ready for this. He had been excited to bring Tommy home but the idea of explaining everything felt overwhelming. But maybe that was because Techno didn’t really want to come to terms with all that had happened. Regardless, he knew his family deserved an explanation so he walked over to Phil’s office shortly after dropping Clementine off with Tommy. He opened the door and walked in unsurprised to see both Wilbur and Phil already there.

“Hey mate,” Phil said quietly as Techno took a seat, his family copied the action.

“So, where should I start?” Techno asked, looking at Phil.

“How about from the beginning, how did you meet Tommy?” Phil asked as Wilbur settled in, clearly curious as well even though it was increasingly obvious that Wil didn’t know who Tommy was.

“He was my first and only mission under Dream” Techno started “I was assigned to train Tommy to fight, when I first met him it was obvious that he-” Techno paused glancing at Phil, he wasn’t sure that he wanted to burden his dad with the knowledge of Tommy’s exact conditions.

“He what?” Phil asked “I want to know every detail Tech, don’t even think about skipping over anything”

“He was clearly malnourished, physically weak and to be completely honest, I was surprised the kid was still alive” Techno continued “it became apparent the next day that the information he had access to was extremely limited and that he was... very lonely, he knew very little about himself including his abilities as a hybrid and what kind of hybrid he was exactly.”

“He’s avian right?” Wilbur asked, he hadn’t seen any wings but he had noticed the red feathers that were grouped behind Tommy’s ears, not unlike his own brown feathers. Wilbur tried not to think about the feather colors, it was just another painful similarity between this kid and his dead brother.

“He’s half-avian, half-phantom” Techno corrected, watching carefully as Wilbur stilled at the information before nodding a little to himself.

“He did seem rather pale,” Wilbur mumbled to himself.

“So you trained him” Phil prompted and Techno nodded.

“I trained him, the first thing we did was test out his avian abilities-”

“What about his phantom ones?” Wilbur interrupted

“Tommy wasn’t healthy enough to give those a go, we never did try and activate those” Techno said with a thoughtful hum “any way we tested his avian abilities and despite his poor health, he was able to run really fast, though it only lasted around a minute before he lost control. We also tested his wings-”

“He has wings?” Wilbur interrupted again and Techno sighed.

“Yes he has wings, he was able to glide fairly well but his wings were very weak, so we worked on strengthening them before I had him practice gliding, he’s really good at it now.” Techno paused “I also spent time teaching Tommy about the outside world, mostly about what things look like or feel like, he had a lot of questions-”

“Why would you need to teach him about that stuff?” Wilbur asked and Techno was starting to feel really frustrated by his continuous interruptions.

“I just told you his information was limited” Techno groaned.

“Well yeah, I know that but surely he-”

“Wilbur, I don’t think you understand” Techno interrupted “Tommy was locked in a room, underground, for over ten years. He doesn’t remember what the outside world is like at all”

“Oh” Wilbur mumbled “oh shit”

“Yeah,” Techno took a breath “so I spent a lot of time teaching Tommy certain concepts, including time. He knew about years, months, weeks, and days because of Dream but he didn’t know anything about hours or minutes so that was the first thing I taught him about and I gave him a clock so he could keep track of the time that way-”

“How did he manage to keep track of time before?” This time it was Phil who interrupted.

“He uh he counted days out using plates” Techno explained, “he said that even if he didn’t get two meals that day, Dream still had the kitchen send down an empty plate during meal times.”

The other two didn’t say anything but Techno could tell from their faces that Phil was angry and Wilbur was disgusted.

“I also taught him about the base,” Techno continued “I snuck him a blueprint of the place and went over it with him, I thought it would be nice for him to know what was around him. I also snuck in some pieces of the outside world, what I couldn’t bring him I did my best to describe.”

“When did you realize who Tommy was?” Phil asked after a moment.

“After Dream captured me, he told me the truth about Tommy”

“Hey uh wait I think I missed something,” Wilbur said looking between Phil and Techno “first off, Dream captured you? Second, what- what’s the truth about To- the child?”

“Wilbur” Phil started tone soft “Wilbur, Tommy is your little brother”

Wilbur just stared at Phil for a moment before he started laughing although he didn’t sound very amused “is this- is this some kind of sick joke? My brother is dead, I saw him die, Phil”

“I know Wilbur I know but Tommy-”

“No!” Wilbur said standing up so he was towering over Phil “no. Stop lying, stop saying that. That little gremlin is not my little brother, he’s not Tommy”

“Wilbur,” Techno said, forcing every ounce of sincerity he had into his voice “it’s true.”

Wilbur whirled around to face Techno, his expression twisting into something mean and ugly “and how would you know that Technoblade? Before you left for this trip you didn’t even know my brother’s name, how the hell would you know that- that fucking kid is my brother?”

“Wilbur” Phil started but it was Techno’s time to interrupt.

“Because Dream told me,” Techno said, glaring down his older brother.

“And how the hell would Dream know?!” Wilbur shouted not backing down “How the hell would Dream of all people know shit about my little brother?”

“Because Dream is ExDee’s brother” Techno answered “and his power can bring people back from the dead”

Wilbur’s face paled considerably as he slowly sat back down.

“And how do you know Techno?” Phil asked quietly as if sensing he didn’t want to hear the answer.

Techno took a shaky breath in “because he made me kill Tommy,” he exhaled “and then he brought him back”

*** Tommy Break ***

Tommy wasn’t entirely sure what he was meant to do in the room now that he had settled in. He hadn’t brought any of his puzzles, the books had been heavy enough on their own and he didn’t want to risk slowing himself down when he was going to rescue Technoblade. He could read through his books again, but a lot of them didn’t seem as interesting, not when he had finally experienced the very things he had been reading about. He paced around his room trying to think of something to do.

“I just don’t know Clem,” he said looking at the plant that was seated comfortably near the window “I don’t want to read my books but I didn’t really bring anything else with me”

The plant as usual did not respond as Tommy drew closer to where she was sitting. He looked out the window longingly up at the sky. It was nice to be able to see it, Tommy wasn’t sure he’d ever get used to it. His head suddenly snapped to look over at Clementine.

“Clem I am not climbing out of the window!” Tommy scowled “I don’t even know how to open it and I don’t know what will happen if I do. It could trigger an alarm or something and I don’t want to get in trouble. I’m lucky to even have a window, I don’t want to risk them taking it away”

Tommy was pretty sure that if Clementine could talk she’d probably say something along the lines of ‘stop blaming me for your own stupid ideas it isn’t healthy.’

But Clementine couldn’t talk, so he guessed he’d never know.

*** Tommy Break ***

“What do you mean, you killed Tommy?” Phil asked and Techno shrunk back a bit at the glare being sent his way.

“George force activated my powers” Techno explained quietly “and Dream made Tommy grab my hand while they were activated”

“He was withered?” Wilbur asked, sounding horrified.

“Yeah he-” (the veins on Tommy’s arms turned pitch black as Wither started to take effect. Tommy whimpered as he stumbled back, black blood-) Techno shut those thoughts down “yeah he was”

“So George has a hijacking ability?” Phil mused no longer glaring daggers at Techno.

“Yeah, it’s strong too” Techno sighed “I couldn’t fight back at all, and trust me I tried”

Phil looked troubled at this and Techno didn’t want to add to it but there was more to the story, more that both Wilbur and Phil needed to know.

“I uh I think Tommy has probably been through that process a lot,” Techno said.

“What?”

“The whole dying and being brought back thing? I think that- I don’t exactly have proof- but I’m pretty sure Dream did that to him a lot. Used it as some kind of punishment for disobeying him” Techno answered quietly, voice in almost a whisper as both of his family members looked at him in horror. “There is this little room beneath where Tommy stayed, Tommy called it the classroom but Phil it was covered in bloodstains and there were gouges in the walls on the stairway down as if- as if someone had dug their fingers in only to be pulled away by someone else much stronger than them. Tommy said that Dream taught him lessons down there and after- after I... When Dream was reviving Tommy that’s what he called it, he said it was a lesson.” Techno felt sick as he said the words.

“Holy shit” Wilbur whispered to himself, he still wasn’t totally convinced that Tommy was really his little brother (his Tommy) but regardless he heart ached at the idea of the child he had been teasing just a few moments earlier having died multiple times in order to discipline him. “That’s- that’s so fucked up”

“There’s more,” Techno said reluctantly. “When I brought Tommy over to Sam’s, he told me that someone’s power is still active and it’s attached to Tommy.”

“A tracker?” Phil asked with a slight frown on his face.

“Possibly” Techno nodded “but Sam said- Sam said that it was possible that it’s what’s currently keeping Tommy alive”

“So we can’t risk deactivating it” Phil sighed “that... certainly is an issue, one we’ll have to figure out later. I’m going to go make us all some lunch. Tech, Do you know what Tommy might like?”

“Grilled cheese maybe? And some fruit, he can’t eat meat” Techno answered.

“Yeah I remember, he always had some issues stomaching it when he was little” Phil said standing up.

“That’s- he’s not Tommy” Wilbur argued “stop pretending like he is”

“Wilbur-”

“Stop! I don’t- listen I feel for the kid okay? Yes he has a lot in common with our Tommy, but we don’t know for sure that it’s really him. I’ll admit that it’s possible, but lets- I just don’t want to get my hopes up” Wilbur ended, looking down at his hands “I don’t want to get my hopes up only to find out it isn’t Tommy and it was all just some trick. It would be like- it would feel like losing him all over again”

“Okay mate, it’s alright, listen we can have Sam do a blood test later to find out for sure ok?” Phil said, reaching over and gently rubbing Wilbur’s back watching as Wilbur hesitated for a moment but nodded in agreement “okay, Techno why don’t you grab Tommy for lunch, I’ll go get started in the kitchen” with that Phil exited his office leaving the two brothers alone for a moment.

“Do you uh wanna come with me to get Tommy?” Techno asked awkwardly.

His older brother sighed but gave Techno a small smile “alright” he said and stood up. Together, the two left the office and made their way towards Tommy’s room.

There was a knock on Tommy’s door again, but this time he knew how to respond.

“Come in,” he said immediately, standing from his spot on the bed holding Clementine in his arms.

The door swung open and Techno and Wilbur walked in.

“Hi” Tommy greeted, hugging Clementine closer to his chest, Wilbur had seemed okay when they had met earlier, but he wasn’t sure that he could trust the taller male.

“Hullo” Techno responded and Wilbur just gave him a wave as he looked around Tommy’s room. “We came to grab you for lunch, did you want to eat in here or in the kitchen?”

Tommy’s eyes widened a bit “I can do that?” he asked quietly.

Techno’s eyebrows furrowed together in a way that Tommy knew meant he was confused as Wilbur looked a bit pained at the question. Tommy made a mental note not to ask too many questions around Wilbur.

“Yeah, of course, you can,” Techno said softly.

“And box guy- or um Phil, is okay with me leaving my room?” Tommy asked just to make sure, Wilbur snickered a bit at the words ‘box guy’ but seemed confused by Tommy’s question. Techno on the other hand looked significantly less confused.

“Tommy what I’m about to tell you is very important” Techno began, crouching down a bit so he and Tommy were eye level “this room isn’t like your other one, you are allowed to leave this room whenever you want”

At those words, Wilbur seemed a little less confused and was giving Tommy a look he didn’t quite recognize so he stopped looking at Wilbur and focused on Techno who he could read a

bit more easily.

“Whenever I want?” Tommy questioned unsure if he trusted those words.

“Yes, whenever you want. Tommy none of us are going to lock you in here.” Techno told him, holding eye contact with Tommy until the blond nodded a bit “okay, c’mon Phil’s making lunch” Techno said, taking Tommy’s hand in his own and pulling Tommy towards the door. Tommy happily followed out of the room before pausing.

“I forgot Clementine!” Tommy exclaimed pushing past Wilbur back into his room to grab the potted plant before reemerging from the room, clementine in one arm as he took Techno’s hand again “okay, ready now”

Techno chuckled a little and led Tommy to the kitchen with Wilbur close behind. When they got there, Phil was making grilled cheeses on the stove and humming to himself.

“Do you want to eat on the balcony Tommy?” Techno asked, looking down at the blond.

Tommy looked at Wilbur cautiously before quietly asking Techno “what’s a balcony?”

“It’s like- uh... you remember the platforms from the training room? It’s kind of like that but outside and you really shouldn’t jump off of it” Techno explained and Tommy perked up.

“It’s outside?” he asked just to be sure he heard Techno correctly.

Techno smiled “yeah, should I tell Phil we’re eating on the balcony then?”

Tommy nodded his head eagerly, he didn’t think he’d get to go outside again so quickly. Techno nodded and turned to Phil.

“Tommy and I are eating on the balcony, do you want to join us?”

Phil smiled a bit as he plated the grilled cheeses “I’d be happy too, what do you prefer Tommy, strawberries or apples?”

“I get to choose?” Tommy asked frowning a bit, this was starting to get a bit weird, why were they giving him so many options?

“You get to choose,” Phil reassured him, not seeming bothered by the questions, Tommy noted that in his head.

“Apples please” Tommy answered, giving Phil a small smile. Phil nodded and grabbed a red apple and started cutting it into slices putting them onto one of the plates with grilled cheese.

“Alright, Wilbur, you wanna sit on the balcony with us?” Phil asked, turning to his oldest son who hesitated before shaking his head.

“No thanks, I’m gonna eat lunch in here I think” he answered, taking his plate from the counter where Phil had them set out.

“Okay” Phil said not seeming bothered that Wilbur had decided not to eat with them, he grabbed a plate himself and Techno reached over and grabbed his own before handing the last one to Tommy. “We’ll be outside if you want to join us”

Tommy followed Phil and Techno over to some glass doors that lead out of the kitchen, outside them was a platform, just like Techno had said, with a railing that looked out over the city and a table with some chairs. There was also, to Tommy’s delight, a flower box with various flowers growing from it. Phil and Techno made their way over to the table and set their plates down, Tommy copied the action and set Clementine down next to his plate.

Phil glanced at the plant a few times but decided not to mention it, instead the three dug into their sandwiches in comfortable silence.

“Hey Phil, wanna see something cool?” Techno asked before turning to Tommy “Hey Tommy, can you tell me what kind of flowers are over there?” He pointed to the flower box.

“Uh yeah Candula, Syringa vulgaris and Tulipa” Tommy answered “or uh Marigolds, lilacs, and tulips”

“You just knew that? Just off the top of your head?” Phil asked sounding amazed.

Tommy shrugged “I like plants”

“Is that part of your powers? Can you control plants?”

“Uh nope, I just really like plants”

“Huh,” Phil said leaning back in his chair “what is your power then?”

“I dont-” Tommy paused the words ‘I don’t have one’ still on his lips, he shook his head “I mean it’s um I don’t really understand the exacts of it, Chat called it Snatch”

“Snatch” Phil repeated “I’ve heard of Pickpocket before but not Snatch, what does it do?”

“I can take things, I think” Tommy shrugged. “I’m uh I’m not really sure” his fingers tapping anxiously on the arm of the chair he was sitting in.

“Hey Tommy, what’s the scientific name for an Aspen tree?” Techno asked out of nowhere.

“Uh, Populus Tremuloides” Tommy answered almost immediately as his fingers slowed their tapping.

“And for spruce trees?”

“Which kind?”

“How many are there?”

“Like thirty-five”

“Okay name the first five you can think of”

“Uh Picea Abies, Picea Farreri, Picea Mariana, Picea Rubens, and Picea Wilsonii” Tommy answered as his fingers stopped tapping.

“And their common names?”

“Norway Spruce, Burmese Spruce, Black Spruce, Red Spruce, and Wilson’s Spruce”

Techno nodded and gave Tommy a smile “see what did I tell you, Phil, he’s amazing. He’s really smart”

Tommy felt his cheeks warm up at the praise but he smiled to himself regardless.

Phil was giving Techno a weird look “yeah Tommy that was very impressive” he said turning and giving Tommy a smile.

They spent the rest of lunch in silence.

Chapter End Notes

Hey guys! Thanks so much for reading this chapter, as always if you enjoyed please feel free to let me know! Comments are super motivational to me and really encourage me to keep this story going. Also thank you so much for over 1100 Kudos and 13,000 hits!

The support I've been getting on this story is just absolutely insane! Also, I have a linktree set up that has links to my twitter and the Spotify playlists I have set up for both stories I'm writing <https://linktr.ee/batmansmom> and if that wasn't enough I also have a discord server! I'm planning on posting some cannon facts about the characters and the universe there that likely won't show up in this story on there! It's also meant to be a place for artists, writers, editors and readers to all come together to enjoy

Dreamsmp/SBI content together! It's also where you can try and convince me to give our heroes here a happy ending (just kidding, of course, this story already has a planned ending). It's also where I'll be posting updates and announcements so if I'm unable to post a chapter that day that's where you'll know and I was thinking about starting to use it to get opinions on certain details like chapter titles and also whether I should post later in the day or earlier that kind of stuff. So here's the link to that

<https://discord.gg/FqKxYJDk> feel free to join, thanks again for reading! Until next time

<3

Nightmares

Chapter Summary

“What?”

“I’m not him you know,” Tommy murmured “I can’t be, I spent my whole life with Dream”

“Tommy, who told you?” Techno asked, already suspecting the answer.

Chapter Notes

TRIPLE UPDATE TRIPLE UPDATE TRIPLE UPDATE TRIPLE UPDATE TRIPLE
UPDATE TRIPLE UPDATE TRIPLE UPDATE

CW: Nightmares, panic attacks, mentions of death

Enjoy the chapter!! I had a tone of fun writing all of this for yall today and I'll see you all tomorrow for the next chapter! And if you did enjoy please let me know by commenting below, it really motivates me to keep writing and I love reading your comments!

See the end of the chapter for more [notes](#)

Tommy quickly fell into a new schedule, one with much more freedom than he was used to. He’d get out of bed around 8, watch as Phil made everyone breakfast and eat on the balcony. Then he’d have a choice to either help Phil with the flowers or go with Techno downstairs to a training room. The new training room was a lot different than the one Dream had made for him, but they stuck mostly to the same thing. Their treadmill was much fancier than the old one, but it also went a lot faster than the old one too. Tommy was delighted to find that he could almost get to the max speed on this treadmill too, though he couldn’t do it for longer than a minute.

“You’re much faster than Wilbur” Techno had commented as he helped Tommy up after the treadmill flung him back, “I bet if you keep working on it and using your ability you could probably max out this treadmill too”

That quickly became Tommy’s goal as he found that running became something he really enjoyed.

Unfortunately, this training room didn't have platforms to jump and glide from like the other one had.

"Wilbur doesn't have wings" Techno had explained "and Phil's wings are designed more for flying than for gliding, so if he needs practice he just jumps off the balcony"

"Can I do that?" Tommy asked perking up

"Absolutely not"

If Tommy didn't want to train or help Phil garden, a rare occasion but it did happen, Techno set him up on something he had called a tablet. Tommy hadn't really understood what it was or how it worked, but he did know that there was an endless amount of puzzles he could entertain himself with until lunch.

After lunch, Tommy got to have question time with Techno in his room, though they always kept the door open at Tommy's insistence. Tommy's questions were getting more complicated, the more that he learned about and sometimes Techno didn't have answers but that's ok because he always did his best or even called up Sam a few times so Sam could explain things that Techno couldn't. Question time ended when Techno had to go on patrol, though Tommy wasn't sure why Techno even did that since he always seemed so reluctant to leave.

"Why not just stay?" Tommy had asked on a day he felt a bit more brave than usual "if you don't want to leave why go?"

"It's my job, Tommy" Techno sighed "as much as I'd like to just be home with you, I can't"

"I don't get it" Tommy frowned.

"You will one-day" Techno said "when you have a job too"

Tommy liked when Techno talked like that like Tommy had a future that was something other than dying at Dream's hand.

After question time, Tommy went and helped Phil with dinner then he, Phil, and Wilbur would eat together. It was the only time that Tommy interacted with Wilbur and they usually spent this meal inside because Phil insisted they all eat together and Wilbur insisted on eating inside. Once dinner was finished, Phil set Tommy up on the tablet with his puzzle games, or on the days where Tommy had already used the tablet, would give him a new book to read. At 10 o'clock, Techno would return from patrolling and Wilbur would leave for his shift, and Tommy would lie in bed (door still wide open as he couldn't get himself to close it) and try to sleep and fail spectacularly.

He'd fall asleep for an hour, maybe two, then he'd wake up in a cold sweat and a scream building in his throat and he'd stay awake staring at the open door, trying to convince himself that this was all real. That he really escaped with Techno, that he really saw the outside, that he was really free from Dream. Then he'd wait for 8 AM and repeat it all again.

It wasn't healthy and he knew it couldn't last but with a new house and a new family came new rules and Tommy was determined to follow them, even if they weren't directly stated. One of those rules was not to bother any member of the apartment past 10 PM. Tommy wasn't stupid, he knew why Phil had given him a 'bedtime'.

Another rule Tommy had learned was not to bother Wilbur outside of when they were eating dinner. Every time Tommy got too close, Wilbur scowled and glared at him until he went away. It didn't take a genius to realize that Wilbur didn't like him.

Those, as far as Tommy could tell, were the two rules he ran into the most and therefore the most important to remember. There were also rules like no going into other people's rooms without permission, and not entering Phil's office, but those weren't particularly difficult rules to follow. So even as the fear rose in his throat and he wanted nothing more than to run to Techno, to prove that he wasn't dreaming, Tommy stayed in bed, in his room, in the dark, alone.

Until one night, when Techno came to him instead.

It had been a particularly bad memory that had woken Tommy up (not a dream, never a dream), and even though he was doing his best to muffle the sobs escaping his mouth, he apparently hadn't done it well enough.

"Tommy?" Techno asked, standing just outside of the entrance to his room, he was in pink pajama pants and a plain white shirt, and his pink hair was loose instead of in its normal braid.

"Tech-" Tommy managed to choke out before he clamped his mouth shut again, he didn't want to risk waking anyone else up. Techno at least might be kind enough not to punish him for waking him up.

Techno stepped into his room looking awkward as he sat on the edge of Tommy's bed. He hesitated but reached out and started running a hand soothingly through Tommy's hair. Tommy had only flinched a little at the motion before relaxing into it. "What happened Tommy?" Techno asked after a moment.

"I'm sorry" Tommy whimpered after a moment of trying to force his voice to work "I'm sorry for waking you up I'm sorry"

"Ssshhhh sshhh it's okay Tommy, you're okay" Techno murmured pulling the younger boy into a hug, "you're alright, I've got you, you're okay"

Tommy let himself break, sobbing into Techno's shoulder as he clung to the hero, scared that in a moment he would wake up and it would all have been just a dream. Techno rocked them back and forth, running a hand through Tommy's feathers letting the boy just cry it out as he whispered reassurances.

"Please don't leave" Tommy sobbed "don't leave me alone with him again"

“With Dream?” Techno asked and when Tommy nodded, he held his little brother just a bit tighter “never. Tommy you’re never going to see him again, I’m going to make sure of it”

“Promise?” Tommy asked, looking up with tears still in his eyes.

Techno hesitated but then he nodded “I promise”

And Tommy believed him because Techno never broke a promise.

After that night, Tommy’s rules shifted. While Phil still encouraged the fourteen-year-old to go to bed at 10, he no longer had to stay in his room if he couldn’t sleep and he could come to Techno or Phil if he had a nightmare. Often what happened was Tommy would try to sleep for an hour and then come out into the living room when it didn’t work and sit next to Techno on the couch. Sometimes Techno would be reading and he’d read to Tommy, sometimes he’d be working on the tablet. It didn’t matter what Techno was doing, the moment Tommy appeared in the living room (often wrapped in a blanket) he’d lift his arm, and Tommy would sit and curl into Techno’s side until he eventually fell asleep.

On the nights Tommy actually slept in his bed, he usually was rudely awoken by nightmares but this time he didn’t hesitate to go find Techno.

“It doesn’t matter how late it is” Techno had reassured Tommy when he expressed his inability to go get Techno before because of the time “If you’re scared you can come get me or Phil, anytime. It doesn’t matter”

Tommy didn’t like testing that statement, but one night after another bad nightmare, he knocked on Techno’s bedroom door.

A sleepy “come in” came from inside and Tommy opened the door and hesitated before crossing the threshold into Techno’s room. The lights were off and Tommy could hardly see in the room but this apparently wasn’t a problem for Techno as he sat up immediately, seeming much more awake when he realized it was Tommy in his room.

“Tommy? You okay?” the hero asked as Tommy hesitated by the door wondering if this was a mistake. Realization dawned on Techno as he asked gently “did you have a nightmare” and when Tommy nodded hesitantly he didn’t hesitate to lift the blanket. An invitation that Tommy took gratefully, as he slipped into bed next to Techno, shaking as he tried to keep himself from crying.

“It’s alright Tommy, you’re okay” Techno murmured shifting so Tommy was tucked into his side as he lazily ran a hand through the feathers on Tommy’s back “I’ve got you, I’m right here and I’m not going anywhere”

It was easier to feel safe when Techno was next to him.

Things changed once again just as Tommy hit his third week in the house. Phil approached him right before question time, with a question for Tommy.

“We were thinking” Phil started “that maybe it would be good for you if we got you a tutor of sorts, to catch you up on school work”

Tommy tensed a bit at the word school thinking back to that cramped classroom underground.

“It would be private lessons” Phil continued not noticing Tommy had tensed up “it would only be for a few hours a day-”

“I’m sorry” Tommy interrupted suddenly before snapping his mouth shut as he started fiddling with his hands and much quieter saying “I’m sorry please- please don’t-”

Phil hesitated “Tommy? Mate you okay?”

“No lessons” Tommy begged, “please I’ll be good, I’ll be good just no lessons-”

“Tommy- oh Tommy” Phil murmured having just realized what he had said “okay mate, calm down, no lessons I promise no lessons” he soothed reaching his arms out towards Tommy, hesitating when the blond flinched back, he dropped his arms “no lessons Tommy I promise, we won’t hurt you, we’ll never hurt you like that. I’m sorry for scaring you, do you want me to get Techno?”

Tommy shook his head, trying to calm his racing heart as he stared at Phil’s arms. He wasn’t sure why but some part of his brain was begging him to let Phil hug him.

“Mate?” Phil asked, snapping Tommy’s attention back to the older blond “you alright?”

“I- can I-” Tommy huffed frustrated as he tried to word it right, eventually he gave up and just held his arms out. Luckily Phil seemed to understand as he pulled Tommy into his arms, gentler than Techno does and much softer than how Dream would hug him.

“I’ve got you mate” Phil murmured, holding back tears as he held his son for the first time in ten years “I’ve got you” (and I’m never letting you go again).

The first time he heard music coming from Wilbur’s door, Tommy couldn’t help but stop and listen. Tommy had only heard music a few times before and only ever from Sapnap who was usually singing something that sounded violent and angry. This music was entirely different though, softer and much sadder, and beautiful in a way Tommy didn’t know he had the words to describe. He couldn’t help but sit down next to Wilbur’s door, so entranced by it he couldn’t help but stay. Until it cut off suddenly and Wilbur’s door swung open and said person was glaring down at him.

“I um- sorry” Tommy mumbled cowering a bit under Wilbur’s glare “sorry it was just really pretty-”

He heard Wilbur sigh and footsteps retreat back into the room and when he looked up, Wilbur was gone but his door was still open. Tommy stood, ready to leave when Wilbur's voice stopped him.

"Well are you going to come in?" he asked, sounding annoyed.

"What?" Tommy frowned in confusion glancing at the open door and seeing Wilbur waiting impatiently in his room, guitar in his lap as he looked expectantly at Tommy.

Tommy tried not to show how afraid he was but he must have failed because Wilbur's gaze softened.

"I'm not going to hurt you, and I'm not mad that you were listening," Wilbur told the blond "but it's going to sound much better in here than through a door so next time just knock if you want to listen. I don't mind having an audience"

Tommy hesitated but he stepped into Wilbur's room and sat, cross-legged, on the floor in front of the brunette. Wilbur adjusted his grip on the guitar and took a deep breath before he started playing again, something different, not nearly as sad but still soft. Still beautiful and something oddly familiar, the notes were playing on the edges of his memories grasping for something that wasn't there. That couldn't be there, because Tommy had spent his whole life stuck in a room with Dream.

Hadn't he?

The music ended and Tommy was jolted from his thoughts, he gave Wilbur a shy smile "that was really good, did you... did you write it yourself?"

Wilbur studied Tommy for a moment and then shook his head "no, it uh- it used to be my brother's favorite. My mom used to sing it to him before he fell asleep"

"Techno has good taste," Tommy said with a nod.

"Not Techno" Wilbur corrected "I uh I had another brother, he's um he's dead"

"Oh" Tommy's face fell a bit "I'm sorry I didn't know, what uh what was his name?"

"Tommy" Wilbur answered quietly "his name was Tommy"

The two fell in silence as Tommy didn't know what to say to that.

"They think you're him you know," Wilbur said suddenly

"What?"

"Techno and Phil," Wilbur sighed, "they think you're Tommy, our Tommy I mean"

Tommy didn't know how to respond to that so he didn't, he just watched Wilbur as he tried to process that information.

“I’m not so convinced” he added after a moment “you might share a name, you might have the same hybrid mix and the same feathers, but you aren’t him. You can’t be.”

“No” Tommy nodded agreeing “I can’t, I’ve been with Dream my whole life”

Wilbur seemed to relax a bit “exactly, it’s ridiculous that they think you could be him.”

“Yeah” Tommy choked out “ridiculous”

That night he was sitting on the couch again with Techno when he asked the question that had been weighing on him since his conversation with Wilbur.

“Are you only nice to me because you think I’m your brother?” Tommy asked looking up at Techno who looked startled.

“What?”

“I’m not him you know,” Tommy murmured “I can’t be, I spent my whole life with Dream”

“Tommy, who told you?” Techno asked, already suspecting the answer.

“Wilbur, he said you and Phil think I’m him, your Tommy”

“Wilbur is an idiot” Techno sighed “but he isn’t entirely wrong, a lot matches up Tommy, you two would even be the same age.”

Tommy sighed looking down as he started fidgeting with his hands again, trying to blink back tears.

“But” Techno started making Tommy look up at him “I’m not nice to you because I think your him. Regardless if you turn out to be our Tommy or not, you’re still my little brother.”

“What?” Tommy croaked out confusion evident on his face.

“You’re my little brother Tommy, that’s how I see you and nothing is going to change that,” Techno said like it was final, a simple fact.

And Tommy found himself relaxing, because if Techno said it with such certainty then really Tommy had nothing to worry about.

He was Techno’s little brother, and there was nothing in the world that could change that.

Hey guys! Thanks so much for reading this chapter, as always if you enjoyed please feel free to let me know! Comments are super motivational to me and really encourage me to keep this story going. Also thank you so much for over 14,000 hits! The support I've been getting on this story is just absolutely insane! Also, I have a linktree set up that has links to my twitter and the Spotify playlists I have set up for both stories I'm writing <https://linktr.ee/batmansmom> and if that wasn't enough I also have a discord server! I'm planning on posting some cannon facts about the characters and the universe there that likely won't show up in this story on there! It's also meant to be a place for artists, writers, editors and readers to all come together to enjoy Dreamsmip/SBI content together! It's also where you can try and convince me to give our heroes here a happy ending (just kidding, of course, this story already has a planned ending). It's also where I'll be posting updates and announcements so if I'm unable to post a chapter that day that's where you'll know and I was thinking about starting to use it to get opinions on certain details like chapter titles and also whether I should post later in the day or earlier that kind of stuff. So here's the link to that <https://discord.gg/FqKxYJDk> feel free to join, thanks again for reading! Until next time <3

Nukelover and Oreo Boy

Chapter Summary

“So, what are your powers then?” Tommy asked, looking at Tubbo who smiled mischievously.

“Nukes!” He exclaimed, causing Ranboo to sigh and Tommy to look at him in confusion.

Chapter Notes

whattup! Hope you liked yesterday's triple updates, honestly, that was really fun to do. Anyway enjoy this chapter and as always please let me know what you think! Comments are super motivational for me and I have a tendency to go back and read them over and over again. Thanks of reading and I'll see you at the end notes.

See the end of the chapter for more [notes](#)

Tommy had been staying with Techno's family for exactly a month and three days when things changed. Again. Phil had, once again, approached him right before question time with Techno with a question for Tommy, one much less likely to send the boy into a panic.

“Hey, Tommy?” Phil said as knocked on the door frame of Tommy's room, he still insisted on keeping the door open.

“Oh, Phil!” Tommy smiled “you can come in”

Phil stepped into Tommy's room and sat down on the edge of Tommy's bed, where Tommy was sitting with a book open and clementine in his lap.

“Tommy, I wanted to talk to you about something” Phil started “I was thinking- well wondering- if maybe you'd like to meet some new people? Some people your age?”

Tommy just stared at Phil for a moment trying to push down his anxiety at the thought of meeting new people, new people who weren't adults. “Um...” he hesitated, setting his book down as he thought this through as carefully as he could. So far meeting new people had been a good thing, everyone he's met through Techno has been very nice, well almost everyone.

“You don't have to decide now” Phil reassured him as Techno appeared in the doorway “just think about it” then the older blond stood up and walked past Techno out of the room.

“What was that about?” Techno asked as he sat down on Tommy’s bed not far from where Phil had just a moment ago.

“He wanted to know if I wanted to meet new people, people my age” Tommy sighed as he tried to get his thoughts in order.

“Oh” Techno nodded, “and what do you think about that idea?”

“Well...” Tommy trailed off. “I’m not sure, I don’t see why I would need to meet new people. You, Phil, and Wilbur are more than enough”

“But would you like to meet new people?” Techno asked, “do you want to see what it’s like having friends your own age?”

“I don’t see why what I want would matter” Tommy frowned.

Techno sighed “well that’s what you should base this decision on, that and if you feel like you’re ready to go meet new people” he explained, Techno always had the answers even when Tommy didn’t ask the questions he was thinking.

“I just- I don’t want to seem ungrateful-”

“Wanting to make new friends doesn't make you ungrateful” Techno interrupted “we know you like our company, and we’ll always be around if you need us, but if you want to make some friends your age then don’t hold yourself back on our account. I have friends outside of this apartment, so does Phil and hell, even Wilbur has a friend or two.”

“What do you mean even Wilbur?” Wilbur scowled, stopping just in the entrance to Tommy’s room.

“If I speak I’m in trouble” Techno stage whispered to Tommy causing the blond to start laughing.

“Tommy, don't listen to this prick, I have plenty of friends,” Wilbur said glaring at Techno.

Tommy stopped laughing and stared at Wilbur for a moment trying to hide the smile that was fighting its way onto his face.

“What?” Wilbur asked frowning at Tommy “why are you looking at me like that?”

Tommy kept his mouth shut but apparently, Techno didn’t get the memo.

“You called him Tommy,” Techno said, sounding surprised.

“What? No- no I didn’t” Wilbur argued

“You did” Techno stated and as everyone knew, when Techno said it like a fact then it was one.

Wilbur glared angrily at Techno and Tommy tensed waiting for Wilbur to start yelling but instead, he just mumbled “shut up” and walked away.

Techno and Tommy exchanged looks and Techno just shrugged. The original topic of conversation left forgotten, at least for now.

Three days after Phil had first proposed the idea to Tommy, Tommy finally had an answer. He took a deep breath and knocked lightly on the door to Phil’s office waiting for the quiet “come in” before opening the door and stepping inside.

Phil was sitting at his desk apparently doing paperwork, he looked up as Tommy came in.

“Hey Tommy,” he greeted, making sure to keep his voice calm. Tommy was always hesitant to come into Phil’s office for reasons Phil didn’t quite understand yet, so he tried to make sure he was as welcoming and as open as possible when the blond did wander in.

“Hi Phil,” Tommy said, staying near the entrance of the office “I uh I have an answer to the question you asked a few days ago.”

Phil smiled “and what did you decide mate?”

“I’d uh- I’d like to meet new people. Or at least try to” Tommy answered standing a bit straighter as if to appear more confident in his decision but Phil could see Tommy’s hands fidgeting and his fingers tapping some rhythm against his leg and could tell Tommy still felt nervous about his answer.

“Okay,” Phil nodded, “well Wilbur and I have two heroes in training who are around your age that you could meet if you'd like? I can invite them to come over on Wednesday?”

Tommy shifted a bit with an expression on his face that Phil recognized meant that Tommy had a question, so he waited patiently for Tommy to ask.

“Um, what day is Wednesday again?” he asked quietly, Tommy still had difficulty remembering what day of the week it was, it had been one of those time details he had just never gotten the hang of. He was the same way for months.

“Well today is Sunday, so Wednesday is three days from now” Phil reminded gently, giving Tommy a small smile.

Much to Phil’s relief, the tension left Tommy’s shoulders as he relaxed and gave Phil a smile “okay, Thanks Phil! See you later” he said as he left Phil’s office.

“See you later mate,” Phil said as Tommy closed the door of the office behind him.

Wednesday arrived all too soon, in Tommy’s opinion. He was waiting in the living room, clementine in his arms, for the new people to show up.

“Their names are Tubbo and Ranboo” Phil had told him just the day before “Wilbur and I started mentoring them in the hero program just a few months ago, they’re very nice”

“Well, Tubbo can be a bit of a handful” Wilbur interjected earning himself a scowl from Phil.

“Yes Tubbo can be a bit chaotic” Phil agreed but turned to Tommy with a reassuring smile “but he’s also very nice”

While Tommy had appreciated that Phil was trying to soothe his worries, it wasn’t really helping him now, he really wished Techno had stayed tonight rather than going on patrol. A knock on the front door shook Tommy out of his thoughts, he peered at it anxiously as Phil walked over to open it.

Phil looked through the peephole before opening the door with a smile “Tubbo, Ranboo, come on in” he said stepping back to reveal two boys around Tommy’s age standing just outside the door. One was around Tommy’s height with curly brown hair that covered his eyes and horns that peeked just out of his hair. The other one was taller than Phil, with black and white hair and a tail. They were both hybrids, that much was obvious, but Tommy couldn’t tell what kind they were.

“Tommy’s sitting right over there,” Phil said pointing to him and Tommy shrunk a little in his seat, holding Clementine a bit closer.

The two boys made their way over, the taller one approaching first. It was then that Tommy realized that he was holding a pot too.

“Hi, Tommy right? I’m Ranboo and this is Tubbo” The tall one, Ranboo said “I uh- I heard you like plants so I brought you this” he then handed Tommy the pot. Tommy hesitated but sat Clementine aside and took it. Inside the pot were three purple Allium flowers and Tommy couldn’t help but smile.

He set the pot down on the table and picked up Clementine again “thank you” he said “I’m Tommy, it’s uh it’s nice to meet you”

Ranboo smiled a bit at him but Tubbo was just staring at him blankly.

“So what kind of powers do you have?” Tubbo suddenly said, causing Ranboo to turn around and glare at his shorter companion.

“Tubbo!” He scolded

“What?”

“You can’t just ask people that! Not everyone has powers” Ranboo frowned.

“I still don’t see the problem bossman”

“I-” Ranboo sighed as Tommy started laughing.

“It’s uh it’s okay,” Tommy said “I have powers, um mine is called snatch, I can steal shit with it”

“Ooo can I see?” Tubbo asked maneuvering past Ranboo to sit down next to Tommy.

Tommy grinned “are you sure you want to?” he had really gotten used to his power over the last two weeks, he now knew how to trigger it purposely which was good because before he’d be walking around and realize he had Wither on him while Techno was meant to be on patrol or accidentally steal Phil’s phone or keys or wallet or sometimes all three and not notice until the end of the day when he went to change only to find his pockets full of items that did not belong to him.

“Yes,” Tubbo nodded as Ranboo situated himself on the couch across from them.

“Okay, but when Phil gets mad you’re taking the blame”

“I’m not afraid of Phil” Tubbo scoffed “just show me”

So Tommy closed his eyes and reached out, searching for Phil’s presence and eventually finding him in the kitchen. White words popped up in his head of all the things on Phil’s person and with a smirk Tommy chose the glass of water, holding his hand out so it would appear there and not in some random pocket. He felt something cool and smooth appear in his hand and he opened his eyes, grabbing the glass quickly so it didn’t fall.

Tubbo was gaping at him “how in the fuck-”

“TOMMY? DID YOU STEAL SHIT AGAIN?” Phil shouted from the kitchen.

“Uhhh... NO?” Tommy shouted back, handing the glass to Tubbo who took it surprised as Phil came into the living room. Tommy at this point had played this game with both Phil and Techno to know they weren’t really mad. (Techno had had to sit him down and explain that after Tommy had a panic attack over it but regardless) “see it was Tubbo” Tommy said pointing at the brunette, who, much to his surprise nodded along.

“Yep it was me bossman” Tubbo admitted holding up the glass of water “I was thirsty”

Phil sighed and turned his gaze on Ranboo “Ranboo be honest with me, these two have already dug their graves no need to join them” he said dramatically as Tubbo and Tommy giggled in the background.

“It was Tubbo,” Ranboo said with no hesitation and Phil sighed again.

“Tubbo if you were that thirsty you could have just asked” Phil played along as if the glass of water hadn’t just disappeared from his hand which could only have been caused by one of the trios powers.

“I’ll keep that in mind for next time,” Tubbo said seriously with a nod as Phil took the glass of water back and headed back to the kitchen.

The moment he was gone, the trio burst into laughter and Tommy was surprised to find that none of the nervousness he had before was present.

“So, what are your powers then?” Tommy asked, looking at Tubbo who smiled mischievously.

“Nukes!” He exclaimed, causing Ranboo to sigh and Tommy to look at him in confusion.

“I uh I don’t know what that is” Tommy admitted.

“I make shit explode” Tubbo shrugged “not much more to say”

“Right... okay, how about you?” Tommy asked, looking at Ranboo.

“My power is called” Ranboo paused for dramatic effect doing jazz hands as he said “ranboozle!!!”

“I uh- I don’t know what that means either” Tommy frowned.

“He distracts people” Tubbo snorted.

“I don’t just distract people” Ranboo complained “I create illusions and can forcibly redirect people’s attention!”

“He can also teleport” Tubbo added “he’s half enderman and he got lucky. I’m all goat hybrid and the only thing I got were these stupid horns” he sighed pointing to said horns.

“I think they’re cool,” Tommy said.

“Really?” Tubbo asked skeptically.

“Yeah!” Tommy nodded “They could probably really hurt someone if you headbutted them”

“OH! I never thought of that!” Tubbo grinned as Ranboo sighed from the other couch “you know, I think you and I are going to be great friends”

“You know what? I think so too” Tommy grinned back.

Ranboo sighed again, he had a feeling his life was about to become even more chaotic now.

Chapter End Notes

Hey guys! Thanks so much for reading this chapter, as always if you enjoyed please feel free to let me know! Comments are super motivational to me and really encourage me to keep this story going. Also thank you so much for over 1,200 kudos and 15,000 hits! The support I've been getting on this story is just absolutely insane! Also, I have a linktree set up that has links to my twitter and the Spotify playlists I have set up for both

stories I'm writing <https://linktr.ee/batmansmom> and if that wasn't enough I also have a discord server! I'm planning on posting some cannon facts about the characters and the universe there that likely won't show up in this story on there! It's also meant to be a place for artists, writers, editors and readers to all come together to enjoy Dream SMP/SBI content together! If you loved getting a triple update yesterday and want it to happen again, then you should consider joining my discord as it's only because of the folks in there that I felt motivated enough to post three times in one day! It's also where I'll be posting updates and announcements so if I'm unable to post a chapter that day that's where you'll know and I was thinking about starting to use it to get opinions on certain details like chapter titles and also whether I should post later in the day or earlier that kind of stuff. So here's the link to that <https://discord.gg/FqKxYJDk> feel free to join, thanks again for reading! Until next time <3

Shatter

Chapter Summary

“Techno please you promised” Tommy sobbed as he backed up until he hit a wall.

Techno crouched down next to Tommy looking between him and Dream still confused
“what did I promise Tommy?”

“That I wouldn’t have to see him again,” Tommy said as tears blurred his vision

Chapter Notes

DOUBLE UPDATE DOUBLE UPDATE DOUBLE UPDATE DOUBLE UPDATE
DOUBLE UPDATE

(This is like the fifth update I've made in two days we speedrunnin this fic)

CW: Yall got too comfy (Dream, hallucinating, yelling, anger)

Alternative Title: Wilbur Soot is a dickhead for the next 2,008 words

See the end of the chapter for more [notes](#)

Tommy’s relationship with Wilbur was like a seesaw. Sometimes things were good and Wilbur would let him sit and listen while he played his guitar. Other times Wilbur was just plain mean, sending nothing but glares and scowls Tommy’s way, even if the blond was just sitting in the living room minding his own business. It was frustrating to say the least. Especially because Tommy wasn’t sure what he had done wrong on the mean days. At least Dream told Tommy what he did wrong, let him learn from it, Wilbur didn’t tell him shit.

Tommy was growing exhausted of the constant up and down, he wished Wilbur would just choose one and stick with it. He said as much to Tubbo and Ranboo one day when they were over.

“Maybe you should try talking to him about it?” Ranboo suggested.

“He’d just bite my head off and glare at me if I tried to bring it up” Tommy shook his head.

“Yeah that sounds like Wilbur” Tubbo sighed rolling his eyes at his mentor’s actions “he can be a dick but he’ll warm up to you eventually”

“Is eventually any time soon?” Tommy asked bitterly

“How long have you lived with him?”

“Like a month and a half”

“Yeah give it another month or so” Tubbo nodded “that’s how long it took for him to warm up to me”

“Yeah but you don’t remind him of his dead brother” Tommy argued “honestly, I don’t think he’s ever going to stop”

“Don’t say that” Ranboo said setting a comforting hand on Tommy’s shoulder “he’ll come around, just try talking to him. Not necessarily about this but about something else”

“Like what?”

“Like I don’t know the weather or the book you’re reading or ask him to help you with one of your puzzles” Ranboo suggested “see what works, what he responds to well and keep doing that”

“Right okay” Tommy nodded giving Ranboo a smile “Thanks Ran”

“No problem Tommy” Ranboo smiled back

“Tubbo thanks for being useless”

“Hey!”

The next morning while having breakfast, Tommy decided to try one of Ranboo’s suggestions. He set his spoon down when Wilbur walked into the kitchen and took a deep breath.

“Did you know that you can tell the temperature by counting cricket chirps?”

“What?” Wilbur asked, giving Tommy a confused look.

“Yeah! And uh sandstorms can swallow up entire cities” Tommy said with a nod.

“Right... okay” Wilbur mumbled, “isn’t your thing meant to be plants?”

Tommy perked up “do you want to hear about those instead?”

“Definitely not” Wilbur shot him down and walked out of the kitchen. Tommy frowned, wondering ‘why didn’t that work?’

Later, he told Techno about his attempts only for Techno to laugh in his face.

“I’m sorry,” Techno said once he had calmed himself down. “That was rude of me, it’s just- Tommy I know you’re used to just spouting out facts and Phil and I responding to them in order to make conversation, but most people don’t do that.”

Tommy frowned a bit “so then how am I supposed to do it?” he asked, already starting to feel frustrated with this whole thing. He wasn’t sure why he was even trying with stupid Wilbur any way.

“Ask him questions” Techno suggested, “ask him about music, he loves talking about it.”

“But Wilbur hates questions,” Tommy told Techno who gave him a weird look.

“Where did you get that idea?”

Tommy shrugged not wanting to tell Techno that it had been another one of his rules. Techno hadn’t responded well when he found out about ‘the rules’ and had sat Tommy down and explained for an hour that there were no ‘unspoken rules’ Tommy had to follow. Tommy didn’t really want a repeat of that conversation if Techno found out he was still following his rules for Wilbur.

“Okay, well it’s not true. Wilbur doesn’t hate questions he just sometimes isn’t in the mood to answer them” Techno explained, “besides if you ask him about something he likes it doesn’t matter if he’s not in the mood, he’ll likely talk to you about it regardless.”

The next time Tommy attempted to talk to Wilbur he tried to follow Techno’s advice.

“What sort of music do you like the most?” Tommy asked when Wilbur walked past him on his way to get a snack from the kitchen. The question clearly had caught the other off guard because it took him a moment to process the question.

“Umm I quite like indie music,” Wilbur said after a moment with a shrug as he continued on his way to the kitchen, it must have been one of Wilbur’s good days because he hadn’t glared at Tommy even though Tommy had asked a question. Tommy took this to mean that it was okay to keep asking Wilbur questions.

“What’s indie music?” Tommy asked as he followed after Wilbur into the kitchen.

Wilbur sighed a bit as he opened the pantry, reaching in and grabbing a bag of chips “it’s like- it’s- okay basically it’s independent artists right who don’t have the support of a record label so it’s not as commercialized” he explained.

“Oh,” Tommy said, nodding as if he had understood what Wilbur had just said, “what does commercialized mean?”

Wilbur rolled his eyes “It means it was designed with the intention of making money”

“People can make money off of music?”

For some reason this question seemed to set Wilbur off, he slammed the bag of chips down on the countertop “God you are so annoying!” he seethed as Tommy took a step back “Can’t you just leave me alone? I don’t want to answer a billion fucking questions about things that you’re too stupid to understand. That’s Techno’s job, go fucking bother him”

Tommy felt his hands start to shake, he wanted to leave but his legs weren’t cooperating and his chest felt tight and there must be something wrong with his eyes because it wasn’t Wilbur glaring down at him anymore, it was Dream. Dream took a step toward him, hand outstretched and Tommy stumbled back falling in his haste to getaway.

“TECHNO!!!” Tommy shouted as fear coursed through him, for a moment Dream flickered and was replaced by a surprised-looking Wilbur and then it was Dream again. “TECHNO!!”

He heard a door slam open and the hurried footsteps of someone running down the hall as Techno ran into the room glancing between Tommy and Dream.

“What? What happened?” he asked looking confused as Tommy scooted back some more trying to put distance between himself and Dream.

“Really Tommy? Did you just scream for Techno because I told you to go away? What the hell is wrong with you?” Dream asked, sending a scathing glare at Tommy as the blond flinched back.

“Techno please you promised” Tommy sobbed as he backed up until he hit a wall.

Techno crouched down next to Tommy looking between him and Dream still confused “what did I promise Tommy?”

“That I wouldn’t have to see him again,” Tommy said as tears blurred his vision and Dream switched to an angry-looking Wilbur and then switched back. Techno meanwhile seemed to realize what was going on.

“Okay, it’s okay Tommy, just uh just close your eyes. Shut them tight, I’m going to get Phil and he’s going to sit with you ok? I’ll take care of it” Techno murmured and Tommy listened, shutting his eyes as tight as he could. A few minutes later and he felt someone pick him up, not Techno, someone else, Phil maybe? But that was weird, he hadn’t heard Techno call for Phil, how did he get here so fast?

‘No questions Tommy’ Dream’s voice echoed in his head ‘don’t be annoying Tommy’

So Tommy didn’t say anything, he just kept his eyes shut and let Phil carry him away.

The moment Tommy was out of the room Techno turned on Wilbur “what the fuck did you say to him?” he asked, anger underlying his words.

“I just told him to go away-” Wilbur started but Techno didn’t believe a second of it.

“No! No, what did you say Wilbur?” Techno interrupted glaring at his older brother.

Wilbur scowled and looked away, looking slightly guilty as he mumbled “I told him he was annoying and stupid and to leave me alone”

“And what exactly was Tommy doing, to make you think it was okay to say that?” Techno asked, crossing his arms.

“He was just being annoying and asking me these questions-”

“Yeah, he was doing that because he wanted to talk to you!” Techno cut him off, feeling more and more frustrated with his sibling “because you’ve been nothing but an ass the whole time Tommy’s been here, and he notices Wilbur! He wanted to talk to you because he blames himself for you being a dickhead to him, and after all that kid has been through? He doesn’t deserve that.”

Wilbur looked away, seeming just as frustrated as Techno was but he didn’t say anything. Techno waited and when it became clear his brother wasn’t going to respond he just shook his head and made his way to Phil’s room. He had a little brother to check on.

A week passed and Tommy did his best to avoid Wilbur, going as far as to skip meals to avoid seeing him. That was until Phil caught on and dragged him out of his room (he had closed the door for the first time since he realized he could keep it open) and set him up on the balcony with Clementine and a slice of grilled cheese. Tommy was about halfway through his grilled cheese when Wilbur came out onto the balcony, Tommy tensed, the balcony was the one place he was sure that Wilbur wouldn’t come out to. He never had before.

Tommy hoped that Wilbur would just ignore him but apparently no one cared about what Tommy wanted because Wilbur headed straight for him.

“Hi” Tommy greeted shyly, taking another bite out of his sandwich. Wilbur didn’t say anything, he just stared down at Tommy “can I- can I help you?”

“You’ve been very dramatic Tommy,” Wilbur told him “screaming for Techno like that”

“I uh I’m sorry” Tommy murmured looking down at his plate suddenly feeling very cold.

“Yeah that’s not going to cut it” Wilbur snarled “because of you my whole family thinks I’m some kind of monster”

“Umm”

“Do you think I’m a monster, Tommy?”

“I don’t- I don’t think I should answer that” Tommy mumbled scooting away from Wilbur. He didn’t like the way Wilbur was looking at him.

“Guess I’ll have to give you an incentive,” Wilbur said, reaching forward and grabbing Clementine’s pot.

“Leave her alone!” Tommy said, standing up and reaching for the plant.

“Ah ah ah,” Wilbur said with a grin, holding the pot over the edge of the balcony. “Careful Tommy I might drop it”

Tommy glared at the older boy “give her back” he demanded clenching his jaw.

“Answer the question, Tommy,” Wilbur sneered.

“No, I don’t think you’re a monster Wilbur now give her back”

The balcony door opened and Phil rushed out, feathers puffed up “Wilbur put the plant down!”

“Why should I?” Wilbur asked

“Wilbur I sent you out here to apologize-”

“Like I give a shit” Wilbur snarled and for a moment Tommy thought he saw Dream again.

“Wilbur” Phil started taking a step closer.

“Get any closer than that and I’ll drop the plant” Wilbur threatened.

Tommy’s own wings were fidgeting nervously against his back as he watched Wilbur’s grip on the pot loosen.

“Wilbur don’t you dare,” Phil said.

But Wilbur just grinned, something twisted and mean and... and not like Wilbur at all. Even when Wilbur was being rude or an ass he’d never give Tommy a look like that. He’d glare or frown but not grin. Not grin like Tommy’s panic brought him joy.

Then he let go of the pot.

Chapter End Notes

Hey guys! Thanks so much for reading this chapter, as always if you enjoyed please feel free to let me know! Comments are super motivational to me and really encourage me to keep this story going. Also thank you so much for over 1,200 kudos and 16,000 hits!

The support I’ve been getting on this story is just absolutely insane! Also, I have a linktree set up that has links to my twitter and the Spotify playlists I have set up for both stories I’m writing <https://linktr.ee/batmansmom> and if that wasn’t enough I also have a discord server! I’m planning on posting some cannon facts about the characters and the

universe there that likely won't show up in this story on there! It's also meant to be a place for artists, writers, editors and readers to all come together to enjoy Dream SMP/SBI content together! If you loved getting a triple update yesterday and want it to happen again, then you should consider joining my discord as it's only because of the folks in there that I felt motivated enough to post three times in one day! It's also where I'll be posting updates and announcements so if I'm unable to post a chapter that day that's where you'll know and I was thinking about starting to use it to get opinions on certain details like chapter titles and also whether I should post later in the day or earlier that kind of stuff. So here's the link to that <https://discord.gg/FqKxYJDk> feel free to join, thanks again for reading! Until next time <3

Ghost of a Friend

Chapter Summary

“He’s a liar!” Wilbur shouted back “A liar and a thief, and you’re all falling for it”

“You’re delusional,” Techno snapped.

“I’m not the one pretending like some random kid you rescued from some villain’s basement is your long lost little brother!” Wilbur snapped back.

Chapter Notes

Whoa, the response on that last chapter was INSANE!! Seriously that was a LOT of comments (and I loved every last one) you guys are hilarious, I was laughing so hard! So sorry about that cliffhanger, unfortunately, today's chapter is only meant to make that pain WORSE!!! Have fun!

CW: death, yelling, anger, disassociation

A Special Note to My Discord Server: You thought you could rebel against me? You thought you could win this war? You wanted this, asked for it, even if you didn't yet know the consequences of what you were agreeing to. Knowledge has a price, this is yours. (lol I'm havin a lot of fun with this, can you tell?)

See the end of the chapter for more [notes](#)

Tommy didn’t hesitate to vault himself over the balcony railing going after Clementine.

“TOMMY!” he heard Phil shout fearfully as he went over the railing and into open air, but Tommy didn’t care. He was saving Clementine and that was final. He kept his wings tucked as he fell, reaching out as far as he could in an attempt to reach the pot, but he was falling short and falling fast.

“TOMMY” Phil shouted again from somewhere above him “WINGS! PULL OUT YOUR WINGS”

“I CAN’T” Tommy screamed back, still reaching for Clementine’s pot, it was so close, just out of reach.

“PLEASE” Tommy froze surprised by the desperation in Phil’s voice “YOU'RE FALLING TOO FAST TOMMY, YOU NEED TO PULL OUT YOUR WINGS”

Tommy hesitated “I’m sorry” he whispered looking at Clementine as tears blurred his vision, he unfurled his wings, wincing as the sudden strain on them sent a jolt of pain through his back. He slowed his fall. Below him, he heard the pot shatter against the ground. He landed quickly, falling to his knees in front of the broken pot, carefully pulling Clementine from the shards. He heard Phil land in front of him as he held his first friend closer to his chest.

“Can I see her?” Phil asked softly “I’ll be very careful” he promised and Tommy, after a moment of debate, handed her over watching Phil carefully. Phil took the plant gently, his eyes and hands started to glow a dark green color and Phil sighed in relief deactivating his power.

“She’s alive,” Phil told him “we’ll report her and keep an eye on her but she should be okay”

Tommy stilled at the news and then burst into tears rushing forward and hugging Phil who wrapped his wings around the child. “Sshhh it’s okay Tommy, it’s okay, Clementine is going to be just fine” he murmured “C’mon let’s get back inside and you can pick out a new pot for her”

As gently as he could, Phil led the still crying child back inside the apartment building.

Back on the balcony, Wilbur was watching the smile still on his face but an awful feeling in his gut. Behind him, the balcony door opened, and though he didn’t turn he knew who it was.

“Techno” He greeted though the hero didn’t come much closer, instead choosing to stay near the door.

“What did you do Wilbur?” Techno asked, not sounding angry this time, instead, the piglin hybrid had the audacity to sound disappointed.

“Why do you care so much?” Wilbur snapped, turning to face his brother.

“Because Tommy means something to me!” Techno shouted “Because he’s a child! Because he’s been through enough without you antagonizing him, trying to make his life hell because of something that he has no control over”

“He’s a liar!” Wilbur shouted back “A liar and a thief, and you’re all falling for it”

“You’re delusional,” Techno snapped.

“I’m not the one pretending like some random kid you rescued from some villain’s basement is your long-lost little brother!” Wilbur snapped back.

“What is wrong with you?” Techno asked “what is going on, really, because you seemed okay when Tommy first got here but ever since you’ve been more of dickhead than usual”

“He’s irritating, and annoying and- and-”

“He barely even talks to you!” Techno interrupted “he barely says a word to you because all you do is glare and mock and do things that you know will hurt him.”

“I don’t see why you even care!” Wilbur exploded, eyes starting to glow “HE ISN’T TOMMY”

“NO, HE JUST ISN’T YOUR TOMMY” Techno yelled back, when Wilbur didn’t say anything he took a deep breath and lowered his volume “he isn’t your Tommy, even if he really is your brother, he isn’t the same person you remember him being, he never will be and I think that kills you inside. Knowing you might have your brother back but knowing he can’t be the same person that you lost.”

They stood like that for a moment just staring at each other until Wilbur’s eyes stopped glowing,

“I get that you’re frustrated,” Techno said “and upset and hurt, you lost the most important person in your life and now they might be back and it’s just as frustrating and upsetting and it hurts just as bad as it did ten years ago. But you owe Tommy an apology. You crossed a line and being upset and hurt doesn’t give you an excuse to hurt people.”

Wilbur huffed and pushed past Techno into the apartment “whatever” he grumbled stomping off to his room and slamming the door. Techno sighed but walked back in, waiting for Tommy and Phil to come back up.

It didn’t take longer than another few minutes for the apartment door to open, Phil guiding a still teary Tommy inside with one arm, in the other was a potless Clementine who looked a little worse for wear if Techno was being honest.

‘Something to worry about later’ Techno decided as Tommy rushed towards him, the piglin hybrid opened his arms and hugged his brother close.

“Phil says she’s going to be okay,” Tommy said, voice slightly muffled. Techno looked at the plant doubtfully and then at Phil who shrugged and shook his head in a silent indication of ‘I don’t actually know that please don’t say anything’ and sighed a little.

He pulled away and lowered himself down a bit so he was eye level with Tommy “Toms-”

“Phil said she’d be okay!” Tommy interrupted, he sounded so desperate and Techno wished he could reassure his brother but it wasn’t right to get his hopes up.

“Tommy-” he paused again when Tommy’s eyes started watering, god he was going to kill Wilbur “Tommy listen to me, we are going to do everything we can ok? We’ll repot her, we’ll keep her in the sunniest spot we can, we’ll water her, Phil’s even going to go to the store and buy the best quality dirt with the most amount of nutrients in it that he can find’ he gave his dad a pointed glare “but she’s not lookin so good right now-”

“But you’ll try right?” Tommy asked as new tears slipped down his cheeks “you’ll try and save her right?”

“We’ll try” Techno promised, pulling him into another hug “I promise we’ll try”

They repotted Clementine. Phil ran to the store and came home with a forty-three dollar bag of dirt and a blue pot the same shade as the sky and they repotted her. They set her in the sunniest spaces in the house, religiously checked the soil, and that the water was draining. At Tommy’s insistence, they even brought her to Sam for a med scan. Sam had been a very good sport about using his extremely expensive and high-quality tech to scan a plant.

In the end, unfortunately, it just hadn’t been enough. Clementine had been a tenacious plant, having managed to survive with almost no sunlight for most of her life, but it seems even Clementine couldn’t recover from being dropped from the balcony.

Tommy watched day after day as Clementine’s leaves started to droop and, much to his dismay, started to dry up and fall. He was with the plant at pretty much all hours of the day, refusing to train or do puzzles. He wouldn’t move from the pot’s side as he watched his first friend slowly die.

Phil ended up having to bring all of Tommy’s meals to where they had set Clementine, and at night Techno would wait until inevitably, Tommy’s exhaustion caught up with him and he fell asleep. Then he’d carry the child to bed only to come back an hour later to find Tommy back in the spot quietly talking to Clementine.

Wilbur spent this time locked in his room, thinking about what he had done. Techno made sure of it.

It was on one of Clementine’s last days alive that Wilbur finally emerged from his room, voice hoarse as if he’d been crying. He approached Tommy and Clementine while Techno watched carefully off to the side. Tommy tensed as Wilbur approached but didn’t say anything as Wilbur sat down next to him. They sat there in silence for a moment, both just staring at Clementine before Wilbur quietly asked

“Is it okay if I apologize to Clementine?”

Tommy seemed surprised by the question but he nodded, watching Wilbur with wary eyes as he approached the plant.

“I’m sorry Clementine, that was very, very mean of me to throw you off the balcony”

As usual, the plant didn’t respond, but Tommy thought that if she could she’d probably be cussing Wilbur out right now. Then Wilbur turned to Tommy.

“And Tommy I’m sorry I’ve been such an ass, It wasn’t okay for me to act the way I have been-”

“No no it wasn’t” Tommy interrupted, voice quiet.

“I can’t undo my actions,” Wilbur continued “if I could, I would but that isn’t my power. Is there anything I can do to make it better?”

Tommy stared up at Wilbur emptily “you killed my first friend.” he said, voice sounding so hollow and empty that Techno winced at the sound “before I had Clem the only person I had to talk to was Dream. And you killed her.”

Wilbur shifted uncomfortably, the guilt weighing heavily in his stomach.

“I want you to go away” Tommy decided “leave me and Clementine alone, I don’t care if we’re related or not, you aren’t my brother and you never will be”

Wilbur nodded, and Techno winced again (not that he could really blame Tommy), and he walked away. Retreating back down the hallway to his room.

Two days later, Phil came to give Tommy breakfast to find the child staring, teary-eyed, at Clementine whose remaining leaves had dried up and crumbled. Setting the plate to the side, Phil gently grabbed Clementine’s pot and hovered a hand over the plant, eyes, and hands glowing a dark green before sighing heavily. He set her down and pulled Tommy into a hug, wrapping his wings around him “I’m sorry Tommy” he murmured expecting the child to cry, to break, to do something.

But Tommy just sat, eyes empty, staring at the pot. He refused to eat, refused to drink anything, he didn’t say anything and he hardly moved. Eventually, Techno came in and just scooped the child up and brought him to his room. He set Tommy down on the bed and then laid down next to him and just pulled the boy close and waited.

It took four hours for Tommy to come back from wherever in his head he had disappeared to. Techno knew the moment he had finally processed when the boy’s shoulder started to shake as sobs racked his body. Techno couldn’t fix this, and that was killing him inside, so he did what he could. He pulled Tommy closer and he let him cry.

The days that followed Clementine’s death were the worst. Tommy didn’t leave his room, he didn’t touch the food they gave him, couldn’t even be coaxed into it by Techno and Tommy almost always listened to Techno. Clementine still sat in her pot on the windowsill, it didn’t feel right to move her or get rid of her not yet.

They hit the three-day mark of Tommy refusing to eat, and they were getting desperate.

“Tommy please,” Phil said from outside the door (Tommy had shut himself in again, and more worryingly had locked the door.) “Please just eat something, I’m sorry- I’m so sorry about Clementine but she- she wouldn’t want this for you.”

Tommy didn’t respond and Phil was starting to debate getting the key for the door. It would be a bad move on his part in terms of respecting Tommy’s privacy and understanding of the room being his but also he was starving himself so did Phil really have a choice? That’s when Phil got an idea, he rushed back to the kitchen and set Tommy’s plate down on the counter. Techno looked up when he arrived and frowned in confusion as Phil passed him heading towards Clementine’s pot.

“Phil?”

“Holy shit why didn’t I think of this earlier,” Phil said picking up the pot.

“Phil,” Techno sighed “are you going to try and use your powers on a plant?”

“Yes”

“Would that even work?” Techno asked as Phil tugged on his powers bringing them to the forefront of his mind.

“Well she had a soul,” Phil said with a shrug “so why wouldn’t it” his eyes and hands started to glow dark green once again but this time Phil didn’t hold back, letting his power surge into the plant.

“Are we sure this will help?” Techno sighed as he watched as a ghostly image of Clementine appeared in the pot, looking exactly the way she did before Wilbur dropped her off a balcony.

“Worth a shot,” Phil nodded letting his powers recede back, satisfied as the image stayed “besides if Clementine didn’t think this would work I’m sure she’d have let herself fade.”

“Phil she’s a plant, I don’t think she has thoughts” Techno deadpanned before glancing at the ghostly form of Clementine “sorry Clementine but it’s likely true”

“Shush let’s go show Tommy ” Phil said carrying the ghost plant’s pot over to Tommy’s door with Techno close behind. He knocked again “Tommy? We have a surprise, it’s about Clementine”

Unlike every other time Phil or Techno had tried to coax Tommy out of his room, they heard movement from inside the room and a moment later the lock clicked as Tommy opened the door. He stared at the ghostly form of Clementine in Phil’s hands, carefully he reached out and took the plant.

“How- what?” he asked, sounding like he hadn’t talked at all in the last three days (likely because he hadn’t)

“It’s my power,” Phil said “they don’t call me the angel of death for nothing”

“I- I don’t understand” Tommy stuttered holding the pot closer.

“My ability is called Afterlife” Phil explained “and one of the things I can do is summon the souls of previously living things”

“So this is-” Tommy looked up at him, tears starting to fall “this is Clem’s soul?”

“Yes,” Phil murmured, voice going soft as Tommy started sobbing, hugging the pot to his chest. At first, he was worried that he had only upset the child further when Tommy barreled into him, almost knocking him down.

“Thank you” he sobbed “you brought her back”

“I- you’re welcome Tommy,” Phil said, hugging the child back. “You’re welcome”

From across the hall, Wilbur watched from the doorway of his room feeling relieved at the sight of the ghostly plant in the pot. He winced as the back of his neck pricked in pain but did his best to ignore it.

After all, everyone was happy again, he wasn’t going to let something so small ruin it.

Chapter End Notes

Hey guys! Thanks so much for reading this chapter, as always if you enjoyed please feel free to let me know! Comments are super motivational to me and really encourage me to keep this story going. Also thank you so much for over 1,400 kudos and 17,000 hits!

The support I've been getting on this story is just absolutely insane! Also, I have a linktree set up that has links to my twitter and the Spotify playlists I have set up for both stories I'm writing <https://linktr.ee/batmansmom> and if that wasn't enough I also have a discord server! I'm planning on posting some cannon facts about the characters and the universe there that likely won't show up in this story on there! It's also meant to be a place for artists, writers, editors and readers to all come together to enjoy

Dreamsmp/SBI content together! If you want to join the rebellion rising up against me for my crimes against Clementine, then you should consider joining my discord! It's also where I'll be posting updates and announcements so if I'm unable to post a chapter that day that's where you'll know and I was thinking about starting to use it to get opinions on certain details like chapter titles and also whether I should post later in the day or earlier that kind of stuff. So here's the link to that <https://discord.gg/FqKxYJDk> feel free to join, thanks again for reading! Until next time <3

The Deal

Chapter Summary

“We’re going to play a game ok Tommy?” Wilbur smiled trying to cheer up the sobbing toddler in front of him if only to keep him quiet. If only to keep him safe “It’s going to be a fun game! And there’s a prize if you do really really well! The game is you have to stay super quiet and super still until I or dad comes and gets you”

Chapter Notes

I thought about giving you guys a break from the angst today but my flowers really need watering so uh hand over the tears!

CW: Death, violence, blood

A special message to my discord server: If you'd like to request a personal apology please use the whoops my bad channel so I can get to all of you easier. Thanks.

See the end of the chapter for more [notes](#)

When the house came down around them, Wilbur did exactly what Phil told him to do, he grabbed Tommy and ran for the basement. They weren’t even close to the door when the supervillain landed in front of their house, glowing an ugly neon green, face twisted in a way that Wilbur knew was inhuman. With no other options, he shoved his little brother behind a particularly large pile of rubble and said

“We’re going to play a game ok Tommy?” Wilbur smiled trying to cheer up the sobbing toddler in front of him if only to keep him quiet. If only to keep him safe “It’s going to be a fun game! And there’s a prize if you do really really well! The game is you have to stay super quiet and super still until I or dad comes and gets you”

At the mention of the game, the tears cleared immediately and a smile appeared on the child’s face “okay Wilby” Tommy agreed happily, Wilbur had a feeling that Tommy didn’t really understand what was going on but that was okay. Tommy could believe wholeheartedly that this was a game, as long as he stayed safe. Wilbur brushed aside Tommy’s brown curly hair and pressed a kiss to his forehead.

“Okay Toms, stay quiet and stay still and don’t look ok? It’s all going to be okay and when this is all over Phil can take you flying ok? Just stay quiet and stay still and don’t look, easy right?” Wilbur murmured before leaving the child behind and stepping into the open, there

wasn't a place that he could hide that would keep the villain from seeing him. The only thing he could do was hope that maybe the villain would take mercy on him.

Wilbur forced himself to stay still as ExDee picked his way through the rubble of his house, forcing himself not to scream when one glowing green eye made contact with his own brown ones.

"Well well well, what do we have here?" ExDee grinned and Wilbur flinched back a little. The villain picked his way closer to Wilbur and his original plan went out the window.

"Please don't kill me" Wilbur begged as the villain got too close for comfort.

ExDee frowned "but you'd make such a good gift for my brother," he said and though Wilbur didn't have any idea what that meant, his stomach still dropped at the words.

"No, please please I don't want to die, I'll do anything" Wilbur bargained and the villain perked up at the words.

"Anything?" he asked "okay let's make a deal, I won't kill you" the demon held out his hand and Wilbur felt the panic rise in him, he didn't hesitate to grab the villain's hand and shake it, not bothering to hear the rest of the deal.

"Deal," he said and then paused, eyebrows furrowing wondering why in the world he had just done that. He knew better to accept a deal with a demon before hearing the whole deal.

ExDee grinned "excellent" then he pulled Wilbur closer and placed his other hand on the back of Wilbur's neck. There was a bright flash and Wilbur fell to the ground screaming. It felt like he was on fire like he was being torn apart, when it was over, Wilbur was staring up at the smoke-filled sky with someone's hand running soothingly through his hair. "Don't worry," ExDee said "you're okay, I was just sealing the deal"

Wilbur sobbed, trying to force himself to move, to stand, to run as far as he could from the villain. But nothing was working, his legs weren't cooperating, everything felt oddly numb.

"Wilby?"

No. no nono nnononononono why had Tommy come out? Why? No nonononono

"Hello there little one" ExDee greeted, standing and slinking towards Tommy who at least had the common sense to back away looking afraid.

"Don't hurt him" Wilbur croaked, as adrenaline shot through his system as the demon closed in on his little brother. He managed to get his legs under him, managed to stand, managed to take a step towards Tommy, knowing that it wouldn't be enough. That it was pointless.

"Oh Wilbur," the demon grinned and Wilbur wondered for a moment as to how it knew his name "that wasn't the deal we made," it said as it reached down and grabbed Tommy by his hair, lifting him into the air causing the four-year-old to scream bloody murder at the pain in his scalp. "Besides, I think he'd make an excellent gift for my brother. I'd have preferred you but this little one could be very interesting to play with"

“I- I want to alter the deal,” Wilbur said looking the demon in the eyes “you can take me, kill me, but leave my brother alone please-”

“I’m sorry Wilbur,” the demon said, not looking very sorry at all as it pulled out a knife “but I’m not interested in altering the deal right now, I’m a little busy collecting my end from the original”

“What?”

“A soul in exchange for a soul” the demon smiled “your brother’s life in exchange for your own” and Wilbur could only watch in horror as the demon slit his brother’s throat.

“No” Wilbur mumbled taking a few shaky steps forward “no no no” the demon dropped his brother’s body on the ground and Wilbur stumbled forward falling to his knees in front of it as he picked up Tommy, holding him close to his chest as he sobbed. “No Tommy no hang on, please please hang on, you’re going to be okay Tommy, you’re going to be okay”

The demon laughed as Wilbur curled around his little brother’s body, not caring as his baby brother’s blood stained his shirt and his hands. “You’re a monster,” Wilbur sobbed glaring up at the demon.

“You’re the one who traded your brother’s life for your own” The demon smirked before crouching down and jerking Tommy’s body away from Wilbur’s arms. When Wilbur opened his mouth to protest, the demon kicked him in the stomach, making the teen double over. “Here’s what you’re going to do Wilbur, you are going to stay here until someone arrives to get you, and then you’re going to tell them that I killed your little brother. And you won’t tell them why and you won’t tell them that I took the body.”

“And why would I listen to you?” Wilbur asked, glaring up at the villain.

“You don’t want the heroes to know you’re a monster do you?” the demon asked “because only monsters trade their brother’s life for their own. Instead, you’re going to say that in exchange for your life, I made a deal with you not to say the details of what happened here because they’ll see the mark Wilbur. They’ll see the mark and they’ll wonder what you agreed to in order to get it.”

Wilbur instinctively reached back and touched the back of his neck, fingers tracing over the newly raised mark that signified the deal he made with the demon. “What are you going to do with Tommy?” he asked quietly, looking at the four-year-olds body feeling oddly calm.

The demon smiled again “well he’s a gift for my brother, I might wrap him, maybe stick him under a tree. Christmas is coming up isn’t it?”

Wilbur felt sick at the thought of the demon wrapping his brother’s body as a Christmas present.

“But it’s not really any of your business is it?” the demon stepped closer “just tell them what I told you to tell them, mourn the loss of your little brother and move on. I’d hate to have to come back and take away another son from Zephyrus”

Wilbur froze at the sound of his father's hero name "you- you know-"

"You think I stumbled into this house by accident?" ExDee laughed "it was no coincidence, I'm here to send a message. No one is safe, not the heroes, not their families, no one. So you're going to do what I say and you're not going to ask any more questions unless you want to end up like your brother."

With that the villain walked away, with the body of Wilbur's little brother still in his arms.

When Phil landed in front of him, nearly twenty minutes after ExDee had left, he was still on his knees staring emptily at the spot he had last seen his brother. When Phil asked about the blood on Wilbur's shirt he choked out the truth, that it was Tommy's blood not his own. That ExDee had killed Tommy and then the first lie of many 'that he couldn't save Tommy'. He didn't say anything as Phil spent countless days searching the rubble for his brother's body, so they could give him a proper burial. When asked for more details on what happened to Tommy, Wilbur had pointed at the mark on his neck and explained that the only reason he survived was that he made a deal with the demon to not say more about his brother's death.

For the year that followed Wilbur wore a bandana around his neck, hiding the mark of the most well-known demon in the country. Hiding the fact that he had made a deal with the demon. He and Phil moved into an apartment in L'manburg and the next time ExDee dared to show his face near the city of heroes, Phil didn't hesitate to send Wilbur across the country to keep him safe. Wilbur watched as the L'manburg news, live broadcasted the destruction of the city and the final showdown between the heroes and ExDee. He watched as hero after hero lost their life to the demon until his own father stepped forward, wings fully outstretched and sword in hand.

He watched as Zephyrus's power activated, eyes and hands glowing a dark green as his fallen comrades rose again to join him in the battle against the demon. He watched as his father plunged a sword through the demon's chest, whispering something to him as he died before pulling the sword loose. He felt as the mark on the back of his neck burned agonizingly before disappearing from his neck, signifying the death of the Demon as the media praised Zephyrus nicknaming him the Angel of Death.

A month later, Wilbur stood proudly as his dad was named the world's #1 hero and let a tear or two shed when he saw the red feather hanging from his hat, his own feather tucked safely under his shirt.

Years later when Wilbur made his debut as a hero, he kept his own red feather clipped over his heart.

Now, ten years after the death of his brother and nine after the death of ExDee, Wilbur ran his fingers over the raised mark on the back of his neck in pure disbelief. After carefully angling a small hand mirror, he got a clearer look at the mark and couldn't help but let the mirror slip from his grasp. It shouldn't be possible. The deal had been completed before ExDee died

which is why the mark faded in the first place. So why was it back? Wilbur felt his heart pound as his mind searched for an excuse, a reason why the mark would be back.

Someone knocked on the bathroom door and Wilbur was suddenly very aware that there were shards of glass around his feet. The mirror must have broken when he dropped it. Wilbur turned and opened the bathroom door to see Phil standing there looking worried.

“I heard something break, is everything ok?”

“The mark is back” Wilbur said “the mark- the deal mark, the one from ExDee? It’s back”

Phil stared at him “that’s impossible, ExDee is dead and the deal was complete. It disappeared”

Wilbur winced as the back of neck pulsed angrily in pain, the mark hadn’t done that before, it only had hurt when it disappeared.

Phil paled a little with the knowledge that not only was the mark back, but it was also apparently hurting Wilbur. “Lets get you to Sam” he decided leading his oldest son out of the bathroom and towards the exit to the apartment.

At the sound of the apartment’s front door shutting behind them, Techno stepped out from where he had been hiding, in the next room over. He frowned, more than a little confused, what did his brother mean? Making a deal with ExDee? He shook his head and pulled out his cell phone, scrolling back through his contacts until he found the name he was looking for. He put the phone to his ear, hearing it ring once, twice before someone picked up.

“Skeppy? Hey, I need a favor, is Bad around?”

Chapter End Notes

Hey guys! Thanks so much for reading this chapter, as always if you enjoyed please feel free to let me know! Comments are super motivational to me and really encourage me to keep this story going. Also thank you so much for over 1,400 kudos and 19,000 hits! The support I've been getting on this story is just absolutely insane! Also, I have a linktree set up that has links to my twitter and the Spotify playlists I have set up for both stories I'm writing <https://linktr.ee/batmansmom> and if that wasn't enough I also have a discord server! I'm planning on posting some cannon facts about the characters and the universe there that likely won't show up in this story on there! It's also meant to be a place for artists, writers, editors and readers to all come together to enjoy Dream SMP/SBI content together! If you want to join the rebellion rising up against me for my crimes against Clementine, then you should consider joining my discord! It's also where I'll be posting updates and announcements so if I'm unable to post a chapter that day that's where you'll know and I was thinking about starting to use it to get opinions on certain details like chapter titles and also whether I should post later in the day or

earlier that kind of stuff. So here's the link to that <https://discord.gg/FqKxYJDk> feel free to join, thanks again for reading! Until next time <3

This Chapter is Brought to you by Bench Trio Chaos

Chapter Summary

“Oh!” Tubbo said as a brilliant idea infiltrated his mind “we should all go bowling”

“Uh” Ranboo hummed “are we sure that’s a good idea? Especially after what happened-”

“What’s bowling?” Tommy interrupted

Chapter Notes

Sorry for not updating yesterday! I got busy and did some irl stuff so I didn't have time to write out a new chapter. Anyway, here's a new chapter! Hope you enjoy and if you did please feel free to let me know in the comments below! Comments are a huge motivation for me as I usually read them over and over, especially after posting a new chapter. Enjoy!

To my discord server: I love you guys, go get yourselves some east coast ocean beach sand on me <3

See the end of the chapter for more [notes](#)

Tommy was ecstatic to share ghost Clementine (or Phantine as he liked to call her) with Tubbo and Ranboo. They all crowded around the ghost’s pot fascinated by the soul of Clementine.

“So if Clementine has a soul does that mean all plants have souls?” Ranboo asked

“Yep!” Tommy nodded “I’m pretty sure it’s every living thing does”

“Man that makes Phil’s powers even cooler!” Tubbo grinned “god imagine trying to fight the only man ever and his army of ancient tree corpses or something, no way anyone could ever win” Ranboo nodded enthusiastically.

“Yep, my mentor is the coolest out of the three for sure” he agreed

“I don’t know my mentor is pretty cool too” Tubbo argued “he makes my bombs bigger, that’s cool”

“I think Techno’s the coolest” Tommy interrupted.

“You would think that wouldn’t you”

“WHAT’S THAT SUPPOSED TO MEAN”

Ranboo and Tubbo exchanged glances and then burst into laughter.

“It means, of course, you’d think he’s the coolest you don’t go anywhere without him,” Tubbo said a smirk on his face, knowing he was right “the only time you even leave the apartment is if you’re training with him”

“That’s- what’s that got to do with anything,” Tommy asked crossing his arms

“It means it’s obvious that you’re attached to him-”

“Not that there’s anything wrong with that” Ranboo interjected, “I mean it makes sense, we understand why-”

“But you never make any attempt to really leave the apartment building unless Techno is with you” Tubbo continued “and Techno isn’t exactly the type to wander about the city, unless he’s on patrol-”

“Which he can’t bring you on,” Ranboo finished.

Tommy narrowed his eyes “where is this going?”

“Well, we were thinking that it would be good for you to get out of here” Tubbo grinned.

“I uh- I don’t know” Tommy paused, trying not to tense at the idea of leaving the apartment, old habits die hard and old instincts were screaming at him that leaving meant death. “I’m not- I’m still not really used to being here, and outside is always worse there’s always so many people and so many new things I don’t understand-”

“Which is why Tubbo and I were thinking that bringing you to a park would probably be a good first step” Ranboo interrupted before Tommy could work up his anxiety even more.

Tommy perked up at the words “a park?”

“Yeah, there’s one nearby” Tubbo nodded “it’s only a short walk, and it’s not usually crowded on days like this,” he said gesturing to the window that showed the bleak gray storm clouds hovering threateningly in the sky.

Tommy wouldn’t mind if it did end up raining though, he was very curious about rain. It had rained several times during the almost two months of staying with Techno’s family, but Phil hadn’t let him go out on the balcony when it did. Always saying something about how it was more likely Tommy would catch a cold if he did go into the rain.

“I should still tell someone before I go” Tommy decided “Phil and Wilbur went to see Sam, but Techno should be home”

Neither of the heroes in training tried to stop him as he dashed excitedly towards Techno's room, he knocked and then entered not waiting for Techno to respond. "Tech-" he paused looking around the room for Techno, but the hero wasn't there. Tommy frowned a bit to himself, they had never done this before, leaving him all alone. Usually at least one person was around. 'Maybe Techno had work stuff' Tommy thought to himself trying to soothe the anxiety building in his chest 'or maybe he just had an errand to run, he'll be back soon. They wouldn't just leave me behind... right?' Shaking himself out of his thoughts he returned to Tubbo and Ranboo with a troubled look on his face.

"He uh he isn't there" Tommy frowned, pretending not to notice when Tubbo and Ranboo exchanged glances also clearly finding it odd that they were the only one's in the apartment right now.

"Well if he isn't around anyway then we might as well just go" Tubbo decided and Ranboo frowned a bit at that logic.

"I uh I don't think-"

"Nonsense, Boo can just tell Phil we're bringing you to the park. It's not like it's a particularly dangerous venture, besides you'll be with two heroes the whole time"

"Well, two heroes in training" Ranboo corrected, pulling out his comm and sending Phil a message "trust me, Tommy, I'm sure they won't mind if you go to the park with us. If anything, I think they'd probably be overjoyed that you're going out"

Tommy just smiled a little, giving in, it would be nice to see trees again. There were some on the street near the apartment but they were little things, maybe a trip to the park would be nice.

They decided it best to leave Clementine behind on this particular journey, while Tommy had protested at first, Tubbo told him it probably wasn't healthy for a ghost plant to get a ton of sun. So they walked to the park without her, Tommy found himself clutching the edges of his shirt the whole time. Eventually, they arrived and Tommy found himself sitting with his friends under the tallest tree in the park. Much to Tommy's delight, it was a Quercus Coccinea or a Scarlet Oaktree.

While there, Tommy found a new friend. It approached him from the shade of the tree bumping his hand gently as Tommy broke into a small smile. He petted the cat hesitantly, being gentle as he scratched behind her ears causing the cat to purr.

"Oh Indigo is back," Tubbo said happily, reaching over to pet the cat.

"Indigo?"

"That's the cat's name, or at least that's what we think it is. She had a tag at one point with the name, there wasn't an address or phone number or anything so we aren't really sure who she belongs to" Tubbo explained as he pets the cat "she tends to wander around the city, she's

very friendly” he pulled his hand back and shook it trying to get the black cat hair off “even if she sheds a lot”

Tommy pulled his own hand away, frowning at the hair stuck to his hand, he wiped it off in the grass. Indigo spent another few minutes there, mostly brushing up against Ranboo and bumping their hands asking for more pets, before getting distracted by something else and disappearing deeper into the park.

They spent about a half-hour there, in the shade of the oak tree, just talking and joking.

“Oh!” Tubbo said as a brilliant idea infiltrated his mind “we should all go bowling”

“Uh” Ranboo hummed “are we sure that’s a good idea? Especially after what happened-”

“What’s bowling?” Tommy interrupted

“Well it’s- okay so basically you take this ball right? And it’s really heavy and you like throw it at these pins and you try and knock all of them down”

“Oh,” Tommy nodded “uh sounds... fun?”

“It is!” Tubbo agreed “and I know the best place for it!”

They ended up in front of a very run-down-looking building on the edge of town. On the side of the building were the words ‘Strike Out!’ that looked like it had been painted on over a decade ago. Tommy hesitated as his friends ran ahead towards the entrance.

“Are you... sure this building is safe?” Tommy asked skeptically.

“Why wouldn’t it be?” Tubbo asked, turning to look at Tommy.

“It just looks a little-” Tommy cut himself off with a sigh.

“Oh yeah no this place is a total dump” Ranboo agreed with a nod, though he made no move to leave from his spot halfway up the stairs.

“So why-?”

“Oh, well it’s the only bowling alley in the city that hasn’t banned Tubbo yet,” Ranboo said as Tubbo nodded.

“Why was he banned from the others?”

Tommy quickly realized why Tubbo was banned from the other bowling alleys. Bowling with Tubbo apparently meant that Tubbo wouldn’t just roll the ball like a normal person. No, Tubbo had to win, so he sent the ball speeding off with an extra boost.

Tommy flinched again as Tubbo released the ball letting an explosion shoot off the palm of his hand sending the ball crashing into the pins.

“Are you sure this is safe?” Tommy asked, ears ringing, there was no one else here besides a few employees, Tommy was fairly certain that that was Tubbo’s fault.

“Oh it’s definitely not” Tubbo nodded, a feral grin stretching on his face “the reason I got banned from the others is because my explosions got a little too big, or misfired”

Tommy turned to look at Ranboo who was nodding in confirmation “yep! This is actually the only one that is still open. Although I think ‘Bowltastic’ is almost done with their uh renovations”

“Yeah, I only blew up a part of a wall at that one” Tubbo nodded.

Tommy took a minute to wonder how in the world Phil had thought these two would be good friends for him. Phil had been right, of course, Tommy wouldn’t trade the two heroes in training for anything, but still.

“You can bill any of the damages and expenses to Wilbur Soot at Hero Commission,” Tubbo told the manager cheerfully as sirens rang in the background. According to Ranboo, the firemen were on their way to put the building out.

The manager was staring at Tubbo in pure exasperation “I’ll be sure to.”

“So... does this mean I’m banned?”

“Oh definitely”

“Damn it”

After getting themselves kicked out and banned for life from ‘Strike Out!’ The three boys decided it would probably be best if they just walked back to the apartment. They entered to find the whole place in shambles, Techno looking murderous and Phil talking in a choked desperate voice on the phone with someone.

“What’s going on?” Tommy asked as worry pooled into his gut “is Wilbur okay?”

The two stopped what they were doing to stare at the blond, there was the clattering of Phil dropping his phone as both ran over to him pulling Tommy into a hug.

“Oh thank god-”

“We thought you’d gotten kidnapped-”

“Whoa whoa I’m- I’m okay I was just out with Tubbo and Ranboo” Tommy said, voice slightly muffled as he hugged the two back. They pulled away looking at him weirdly, if Tommy didn’t know better, he’d say they were looking at him with pride.

“You went out?” Techno asked

“Where did you go? What did you do? Was it good?” Phil worried.

“Well... it’s all a bit of a long story” Tommy said “but I’m confused, why were you guys worried that I had gotten kidnapped”

“Because you weren’t here and you didn’t tell anyone that you were leaving” Phil answered softly “which would have been preferred, but not because we don’t want you to go out. We just want to know that you’re safe.”

“But Ranboo texted you that we were going out?” Tommy frowned turning towards his friend “didn’t you?”

“Haha about that” Ranboo said sheepishly holding up his comm “I kinda forgot to hit send”

Ranboo felt his anxiety start to act up as everyone stared at him for a moment before Phil broke the silence.

“Well I guess that’s ok, mistakes happen,” Phil said “although I think maybe it’s time we got Tommy his own phone in case of impromptu adventures in the future”

Techno nodded in agreement “yeah no harm done really, I’m glad that Tommy trusted you two enough to leave the apartment with you that’s a good thing. So what did you do?”

“Tubbo exploded another bowling alley,” Ranboo told them, ignoring as the goat hybrid started head butting his side, trying to stab him.

“Why’d you tell them that!?” Tubbo asked.

Phil just sighed looking tired and Techno looked confused.

“What do you mean again? Has this... happened before?” Techno asked.

“Oh yeah” Tommy chimed in “apparently Tubbo’s banned from every bowling alley in the city”

“I’m also not welcome at any of the ones in the surrounding suburbs,” Tubbo added.

“Right” Techno nodded “well uh Tommy how do you feel about getting new friends?”

“Hey!”

The whole room dissolved into laughter at the offended look on Tubbo’s face when Wilbur shouted from his room.

“TUBBO WHY DID I GET A CALL FROM COMMISSION SAYING I OWED ANOTHER BOWLING ALLEY MONEY???”

“Well it’s been fun hanging out Tommy, but uh Boo and I gotta go before Wilbur murders me,” Tubbo said with a grin “see you later!” and with that, the two disappeared, Ranboo likely having teleported them home, leaving nothing but purple particles behind.

Chapter End Notes

Hey guys! Thanks so much for reading this chapter, as always if you enjoyed please feel free to let me know! Comments are super motivational to me and really encourage me to keep this story going. Also thank you so much for over 1,500 kudos and 22,000 hits! The support I've been getting on this story is just absolutely insane! Also, I have a linktree set up that has links to my twitter and the Spotify playlists I have set up for both stories I'm writing <https://linktr.ee/batmansmom> and if that wasn't enough I also have a discord server! I'm planning on posting some cannon facts about the characters and the universe there that likely won't show up in this story on there! It's also meant to be a place for artists, writers, editors and readers to all come together to enjoy Dream SMP/SBI content together! If you want to join the rebellion rising up against me for my crimes against Clementine, then you should consider joining my discord! It's also where I'll be posting updates and announcements so if I'm unable to post a chapter that day that's where you'll know and I was thinking about starting to use it to get opinions on certain details like chapter titles and also whether I should post later in the day or earlier that kind of stuff. So here's the link to that <https://discord.gg/FqKxYJDk> feel free to join, thanks again for reading! Until next time <3

A Debt to be Paid

Chapter Summary

“Yeah, emotional augmentation.” Sam said “he couldn’t force you to feel things you weren’t already feeling but he could amplify them. I’m pretty sure his ability is actually in effect for you right now”

Wilbur and Phil paused at that.

“Well that makes sense,” Phil said with a sigh “wish we’d have found out before you tossed Tommy’s friend off the roof but that makes sense”

Chapter Notes

Sorry this chapter is shorter than usual, I was just in a car for like five hours and this was all I had in me. Please forgive. I also have a math test tomorrow so wish me luck!

CW: Mentions of death (I think that's it?)

To my Discord:

uuuhhh hi... have fun, lmk what yall thought and uh if you want sneak peaks at the first chapter of that reality shifting au thing let me know.

See the end of the chapter for more [notes](#)

Sam lifted the scanner from the back of Wilbur’s neck with a frown “yeah that’s an active deal mark all right” he concluded with a nod.

Wilbur turned to look at the hero and then at his dad shaking his head “that’s not possible” Wilbur mumbled “ExDee is dead and the deal was completed years ago”

“What was the deal exactly?” Sam asked, causing Wilbur to tense up.

Phil made eye contact with Sam and shook his head a bit, silently telling him he likely wouldn’t get an answer from Wilbur.

“A soul for a soul” Wilbur mumbled catching Phil off guard, Wilbur had never once spoken to him about the exact details of the deal he had made with ExDee saying it was a part of the deal that he couldn’t say what it was.

“What?” Phil questioned, a frown appearing on his face as Wilbur avoided eye contact and instead focused his gaze on the ground.

“Ten years ago, ExDee attacked our house while my dad was away defending L’manburg.” Wilbur began taking a deep breath to steady himself “the house was completely destroyed and I couldn’t get us to the basement in time”

“Us?” Sam questioned

“My brother and I” Wilbur nodded, “so I hid him behind a pile of rubble, he was only four at the time so it hid him pretty well. There was nowhere big enough for me to hide though, so I figured my best bet was begging for my life.”

Phil stared at his son, he had never heard this part of the story before, had never known what exactly had happened in the last few minutes of his youngest son’s life.

“ExDee offered me a deal” Wilbur continued “and I don’t know what happened but suddenly I just felt so... terrified, like I was scared before but this was- it was different, it made me panic. I didn’t hear the full deal, I didn’t wait, I only heard that he wasn’t going to hurt me and I accepted it.”

Sam nodded “yeah I read the reports, a lot of people who made deals with ExDee reported the same thing. They think he was using his abilities to enhance their panic to the point where they’d do anything, agree to anything, to keep ExDee from killing them.”

“That was ExDee’s power?” Wilbur asked, looking up at Sam surprised.

“Yeah, emotional augmentation.” Sam said “he couldn’t force you to feel things you weren’t already feeling but he could amplify them. I’m pretty sure his ability is actually in effect for you right now”

Wilbur and Phil paused at that.

“Well that makes sense,” Phil said with a sigh “wish we’d have found out before you tossed Tommy’s friend off the roof but that makes sense”

“So, what was the deal?” Sam asked, guiding them back towards the original topic.

“A soul for a soul” Wilbur repeated, going quiet for a moment before admitting “In exchange for my own safety, ExDee killed Tommy, my little brother.”

The silence that followed was far too loud. Phil stared at his oldest son in silent horror, Not because he blamed Wilbur for Tommy’s death, of course not, but rather because his oldest son had clearly been blaming himself for ExDee killing his little brother. Sam on the other hand just seemed thoughtful, nodding to himself before offering Wilbur a smile.

“Well then, uh good news, your brother’s not dead,” Sam said “pretty sure he’s living with you actually”

Wilbur just scowled “not you too, that imposter is not my brother.”

“Riiighht” Sam sighed “are you sure that’s not the emotional amplification talking?”

“I-” Wilbur paused frowning, seeming frustrated “I don’t like this, how do I get rid of the stupid mark?”

“Well that wouldn’t be a job for me,” Sam said “I’m not really skilled enough to undo it. But if you give BBH a call, he might be able to sort it out. Otherwise, it won’t fade until the deal is complete”

“And what does that mean?” Wilbur asked quietly, not sure he wanted to know the answer.

“Well, that would mean that you’d have to find your brother and kill him yourself” Sam answered bluntly leaving the two heroes next to him visibly uncomfortable.

“Do you think BBH strong enough to undo ExDee’s mark?” Phil asked hopefully after an awkward silence passed between the three of them.

“Well the guys dead so it’s not like he’s able to put new energy into it” Sam frowned “so yeah BBH should be able to dismantle the deal mark”

“Okay, thanks Sam, we’ll give him a call once we get home” Phil nodded, placing a hand on Wilbur’s shoulder and leading him out of the building. Wilbur himself was deep in thought, thinking about a certain blond who would be waiting for them in the apartment.

Techno sighed as he snuck out the window to his room, he didn’t like the idea of leaving Tommy home alone but this was important. He needed information, he needed to know what was going on with Wilbur, and Skeppy could be flaky at best. This might be the only chance Techno gets to talk to him and Bad.

He walked quickly trying to make it to their agreed meeting spot as quickly as possible. As soon as he turned the last corner, he ran right into the human he was looking for.

“Techno!” Skeppy cheered completely unbothered by the fact that he had just crashed into the pro hero.

“Hullo” Techno sighed “listen I don’t have a lot of time and I’m not just here for pleasantries. Where’s bad?”

“On vacation,” Skeppy said with a smile ignoring how the piglin hybrid groaned in frustration.

“Why didn’t you tell me that when I called?” Techno asked, already starting to feel annoyed with the human in front of him.

“You didn’t ask”

“YES I DID THAT WAS THE WHOLE REASON I CALLED YOU”

“No, you just asked if Bad was around, which he is, just not around here”

“Skeppy, I’m going to kill you,” Techno said glaring down at the other.

“Oh relax, whatever you needed Bad for I’m sure I can do in his place,” Skeppy said not losing even the slightest bit of his smile at the death threat.

“Alright fine, what do you know about demon deals?”

Skeppy’s smile dropped, finally he looked serious “demon deals? What brought this on?”

“I uh overheard Wil talking to dad about it” Techno sighed, “he said something about a deal mark reappearing?”

Skeppy paused thinking about that “well, deal marks only disappear if they’ve been completed and the demon is dead. So it reappearing would either mean; one, your brother broke the deal somehow or two, the demon is alive again.”

Techno stared at Skeppy for a moment “the demon is alive again?”

“Possibly or-”

“The demon could have come back to life?”

“Maybe? I don’t know man the other option is way more likely-”

“It’s not” Techno cut him off “It’s not at all. ExDee is back.”

“ExDee?” Skeppy’s mouth fell open “your brother made a deal with ExDee?”

“Apparently” Techno sighed “I don’t know I just found out about it, I don’t know the details.”

“But like the demon your dad killed on live television? That ExDee?”

“Do you know another ExDee Skeppy?”

“Well no-”

“Yes that ExDee and how his psycho brother just brought him back to life”

“ExDee has a brother?”

“You know Dream?”

“The villain?”

“Yeah”

“Yeah... oh... OH SHIT”

“Yeah”

“Holy fuck”

“Don’t let Bad hear you sayin that” Techno sighed “anyway it’s been fun Skeppy but I need to get back home.”

“Right uh okay, stay safe, call if you have more questions” Skeppy nodded still trying to process the information he had just been given.

“Will do,” Techno said with a wave before heading back to the apartment building.

It was a pain and a half to climb back in through his bedroom window but eventually, he managed without making too much noise. Hopefully, Tommy won’t have even noticed that he had been gone. Techno straightened himself up, trying to make it look like he hadn’t just climbed up the side of the building and then went out into the living room where he had left Tommy with Ranboo and Tubbo. Only to find the room empty.

“Tommy?” Techno called trying to shove down the worried feeling he was starting to get when there came no response. ‘Maybe he’s just in his room’ Techno thought, making his way over. The door was closed which was usually a pretty good sign that Tommy wasn’t in there but he knocked regardless. When no one answered, he peeked into the room to find Tommy wasn’t there either. Techno frowned and went to the balcony but there was no Tommy. Tommy wasn’t in the apartment at all.

Tommy wasn’t in the apartment at all.

One frantic phone call to Phil later and they were both tearing through each room in the house. Phil was on the phone with Sam asking frantically if Tommy was with him and only becoming more distressed when the other answered that no, Tommy was not with him. Phil hung up and started calling every hero that owed them a favor with the request of ‘please find my son he is small and doesn’t know what movies are and oh god he was probably kidnapped again-’

When suddenly the front door to their apartment opened and Tubbo, Ranboo, and Tommy, all laughing and having a good time, strolled casually into the mess of the living room.

“What’s going on?” Tommy asked, “is Wilbur okay?”

“Oh thank god-” Techno rushed forward pulling the child into a hug as relief flooded through him.

“We thought you had gotten kidnapped” Phil sighed pushing Techno out of the way slightly to hug Tommy.

Meanwhile, alone in his room, Wilbur tried to pretend that his relief was only because Techno and Phil had stopped panicking. He hadn’t been worried about stupid imposter Tommy. Not at all.

Not at all.

Chapter End Notes

Hey guys! Thanks so much for reading this chapter, as always if you enjoyed please feel free to let me know! Comments are super motivational to me and really encourage me to keep this story going. Also thank you so much for over 1600 kudos and 24,000 hits! The support I've been getting on this story is just absolutely insane! Also, I have a linktree set up that has links to my twitter and the Spotify playlists I have set up for both stories I'm writing <https://linktr.ee/batmansmom> and if that wasn't enough I also have a discord server! I'm planning on posting some cannon facts about the characters and the universe there that likely won't show up in this story on there! It's also meant to be a place for artists, writers, editors and readers to all come together to enjoy Dream SMP/SBI content together! If you want to join the rebellion rising up against me for my crimes or if you want sneak peaks at upcoming fics, then you should consider joining my discord! It's also where I'll be posting updates and announcements so if I'm unable to post a chapter that day that's where you'll know and I was thinking about starting to use it to get opinions on certain details like chapter titles and also whether I should post later in the day or earlier that kind of stuff. So here's the link to that <https://discord.gg/kn5fZhuM2e> feel free to join, thanks again for reading! Until next time <3

The Storm Approaches

Chapter Summary

“But Phil’s busy, he can’t take me anywhere right now.”

“But I’m not,” Wilbur pointed out, causing Tommy to stare at him in disbelief. “What?”

“But you hate me,” Tommy argued with a confused look on his face.

“I don’t hate you,” Wilbur sighed

Chapter Notes

Sorry for not posting a new chapter yesterday! I had IRL stuff to do so I just didn't have the time. Anyway, welcome to the beginning of the end! That's right, the ending is in sight which is scary to think about! Uploads for this story are likely going to get a lot slower for these last few chapters, as I'm honestly so scared to end it so I'm putting it off a bit. It's weird to think about this being complete, I only started it a few weeks ago! Hope you enjoy this chapter, if you did please please let me know in the comments below! Comments are super motivational and I always read them more than once. It's always fun to see what people think.

CW: mentions of death

To my discord: how dare you guys attempt to rebel against me while I was sleep-deprived and attempting to do math. There are just lines you don't cross. On a different note, if you guys enjoyed seeing me write this chapter live and want to see that kind of thing more often, let me know!

A Special Thanks to h_e_sabers for beta reading this chapter, holy shit didn't realize how amazing having a beta reader is. You did an amazing job so thank you for the help!

See the end of the chapter for more [notes](#)

Tommy didn’t know he could want something so badly. He thought after the trip with Tubbo and Ranboo his need to go outside would be satisfied for the next three months at least. Instead it seemed to have only made his longing to go even worse. This wouldn’t be an issue if Techno was home, or if Phil was available. Tommy was positive that if he brought the problem up to one of them that they would have no problem walking with him to the park or taking him somewhere in the city. But at the moment, Techno was on patrol and Phil was

locked away in his office saying he'd be back to make dinner in a bit. So the only thing Tommy could do about his current predicament is stare longingly at the apartment door and wait.

Wilbur seemed completely unaware of Tommy's predicament as he walked into the living room and looked between Tommy and the door.

"Why are you staring at it like that?" Wilbur asked with a frown.

Tommy looked up at Wilbur and couldn't help but get defensive at the judgemental tone "Like what?"

"Like it gave you a hug and you really want another one."

Tommy just scowled. "Oh fuck off," he mumbled, not particularly in the mood to deal with Wilbur's shit. He hadn't entirely forgiven him for the Clementine ordeal; there was just something difficult about forgiving the guy who tossed his first friend off the balcony.

"Alright, alright forget I said anything," Wilbur said, holding his hands up in mock surrender as he took a seat next to Tommy.

"What are you doing?" Tommy asked, giving Wilbur a weird look.

"Sitting."

"Right here?"

"Is that not allowed?"

"I mean- I guess..." Tommy frowned and went back to staring at the front door.

"Seriously, what is up with you? Aren't you usually doing a puzzle or something right now?"

"Just fuck off Wilbur, if you're going to be a dick go somewhere else," Tommy snapped.

"Jeez touchy," Wilbur rolled his eyes. "If you want to go out so bad you can just ask you know."

"What?"

"It's pretty obvious, you are just staring at the front door."

"But Phil's busy, he can't take me anywhere right now."

"But I'm not," Wilbur pointed out, causing Tommy to stare at him in disbelief. "What?"

"But you hate me," Tommy argued with a confused look on his face.

"I don't hate you," Wilbur sighed, pointedly ignoring Tommy's doubtful look.

"You threw my plant off the balcony."

“So I made a mistake! I was frustrated and that’s not an excuse but I’m still sorry I did that,” Wilbur said. “Listen you don’t have to like me. I would understand if you didn’t, but I am currently your only ticket out of here. So if you want to go somewhere, you can just ask.”

Tommy considered this for a moment, was Wilbur really someone he could trust? How did he know that Wilbur wouldn’t take him to the park and then just leave him there? If Tommy got lost he didn’t have much faith in his ability to find his way back home. But, then again, Wilbur was right about being his only option and Tommy really wanted to get out of this apartment.

“Fine,” Tommy sighed. “Could you take me to the park?”

Wilbur blinked at him in surprise, he’d been expecting Tommy to turn down his offer with how the conversation had been going. “Uh yeah sure,” he said, standing up. “Do you need to grab anything before we go?”

Tommy shook his head, getting up from the couch and grabbing his shoes. He pulled them on and waited as Wilbur did the same and then he followed the older male out the door. Maybe this wouldn’t be so bad.

Tommy was wrong, this was awful. The park itself was great, because how could it be bad, but the silence that stretched awkwardly between him and Wilbur was hell. They were sitting under the same oak tree as he had been when he went with Tubbo and Ranboo, but there was no laughter, no jokes, and no talking this time. Only silence. Wilbur, at least, seemed just as uncomfortable as Tommy did.

“So uh... this is a nice tree,” Wilbur said awkwardly, attempting to start a conversation. He somehow had managed to choose the correct topic, even if the phrasing was awkward because at the mention of the plant, Tommy’s face lit up.

“Yeah, it’s great, it’s a Scarlet Oak,” Tommy nodded, suddenly feeling excited and significantly less lost. “It’s also called a *Quercus Coccinea* and it only grows in North America.”

Wilbur just nodded along and said, “That’s cool, tell me more.” And those were once again the best words he could have said.

Tommy seemed to sit up straighter and Wilbur couldn’t help but smile just a bit as the younger boy started talking animatedly about trees, specifically the ones in the park, telling Wilbur fun fact after fun fact. Even though Wilbur didn’t really understand the conversation he couldn’t help but be drawn in to what Tommy was saying. He was clearly passionate about the topic and that made it easy to listen.

Unfortunately it seemed that the nice day was just not meant to last as within the next twenty minutes, storm clouds settled over them and the rain started to pour down. Wilbur sighed and got closer to the tree, trying to keep himself from getting wet, but Tommy didn't have the same idea. In fact, Wilbur was almost positive that Tommy was staring at the rain with the same longing he had at the front door.

"No," Wilbur said, shaking his head. "Bad idea Tommy, you'll get sick for sure."

"Says you dickhead," Tommy said back, but he had a smile on his face. "I'm too big of a man to get sick anyway."

"Tommy-" Wilbur started, but it was too late as Tommy ran out from the little cover that the tree provided and into the rain.

He was soaked in minutes, but he had the biggest smile on his face as he spun around and jumped in puddles. "C'mon Wilbur, it's fun!"

Wilbur sighed and hesitated, staring at Tommy for a moment before creeping out from under the cover of the tree. Tommy reached forward and grabbed Wilbur's hand, pulling him into the rain. Wilbur flinched as the cold water hit him, trying to shake the cold feeling from his bones. He didn't have much time to adjust before Tommy was pulling him towards a puddle and pushing him into it.

"Tommy," Wilbur complained. "Now my socks are wet," he sighed, running a hand through his hair and pushing it out of his eyes.

Tommy just laughed and jumped as high as he could, landing in the same puddle and splashing both himself and Wilbur. "I've always wanted to do this," Tommy confessed. "I never knew why. I didn't even know what rain looked like until a month ago but hearing about it always made it sound so appealing."

Wilbur paused at that, thinking back to a certain four year old who had loved to splash and play in the rain. He forced a smile and nodded, "I guess it is kind of fun," and then the smile turned mischievous. "But I do need to get my revenge for the wet socks," and with that he shoved Tommy hard enough that the boy fell over into the muddy puddle.

Tommy didn't seem to mind; he laughed and splashed Wilbur again, this time using his hands. Soon enough it devolved into an all out water war, both brothers wrestling and playing, getting utterly soaked in the rain. Until finally Wilbur decided they should call it.

"Phil's going to be so mad when he sees us," Wilbur said with a smile. And Tommy smiled back, knowing that Phil's mad and Dream's mad were two very different things. He smiled knowing that he was safe, even if Phil was a little mad. "You're going to need a shower for sure, you're covered in mud."

"Like you're any better," Tommy teased. "I'd say, you're worse if anything. I definitely won this fight."

Wilbur looked like he wanted to argue but instead he just smiled, reaching over and ruffling Tommy's wet hair, "Sure you did Tommy, sure you did."

When they got home, they found that Phil, Ranboo and Tubbo were all sitting, waiting for them in the kitchen.

"You two are a mess," Phil commented, looking at them fondly.

"We had a bit of a water fight," Wilbur admitted.

"I won," Tommy added with a proud smile on his face.

Phil looked between Wilbur and Tommy with a smile. "Did you now? Well, regardless, I think it's best if you two go take a shower and get into some dry clothes, dinner's nearly ready." With a nod, both brothers headed towards their bathrooms, but before separating Tommy spoke up.

"Hey Wil," he mumbled, making the older pause. "Um just thanks for today, it was- It was really fun," Tommy said, giving the older a smile.

Wilbur's expression softened as he looked at Tommy (his little brother) "It was, let's do it again sometime," he said, smiling back at Tommy. With that the two parted ways.

Techno sighed as he got dressed back in civilian clothes. Patrol today had been a nightmare, but not because there was a lot of crime to stop. It was actually the exact opposite. Techno had been out there for nearly five hours and all of it had been boring. No fighting, no crime stopping, and no word on Dream. The closest thing Techno had gotten to doing his job was helping an old lady cross the street. In fact, Techno was almost positive the only reason the lady had asked for his help was because of how bored he looked.

Techno closed his locker after safely stashing away his suit and turned towards the exit only to come face to face with a person in a crown and dark sunglasses.

"Eret," he greeted with a sigh.

"Techno," they said back. "As much as I'd like to exchange pleasantries, I'm here on business."

"Let me guess, the commission sent you?" Techno asked with growing displeasure; today had already sucked enough, couldn't they just leave him alone?

"Yes," Eret nodded. "They are insisting that you bring Tommy in to give a statement and tell us everything he knows from the ten years he spent with Dream."

Techno rolled his eyes. "Well you can tell the commission that they can shove that request up their ass, Tommy's not ready to relive his last ten years in hell just so the commission can

know information I've already told them."

"Techno," Eret sighed, "It's not a request. They are demanding that-"

"They can't demand shit from me," Techno snapped. "Not after the fuckery they pulled on my last mission, fixing my comm so I couldn't call or contact anyone until check-in dates? It's like you were trying to get me killed!"

"It was a safety protocol-"

"It got Tommy killed," Techno growled. "I could have gotten both of us out of there much quicker if I had actually been able to call in for a pick up. It was dumb luck that Dream didn't decide he'd had his fun messing with me before the check-in date."

Eret didn't say anything, and Techno nodded, shoving past the slightly taller person. "Don't ask again. The kid's been through enough without strangers rifling through his brain and making him relive his worst nightmares," Techno said as he left the locker room.

He walked home, quietly trying to calm the anger that was rising. The Hero Commission always seemed to piss him off; he hated people like them. People who acted like they were the good guys even though they only ever got in the way of the real heroes. Soon enough Techno arrived home; he took the elevator up and unlocked the door to the apartment. He stepped inside, smiling a bit to himself.

He could hear conversations coming from the kitchen, likely meaning that Ranboo and Tubbo were there as well. He slipped out of his shoes and made his way into the kitchen to see he had been correct. Ranboo, Tommy, and Tubbo were sitting with their backs to Techno, with half-eaten plates in front of them arguing about whether or not Tubbo would be cheating if he used his explosive powers in a game of basketball. Ranboo and Tommy were both agreeing that yes, yes Tubbo would be cheating.

He couldn't help but smile fondly as Tommy loudly protested against Tubbo's use of powers. His blond hair was wet and he had a spot of dirt on the side of his neck. But Tommy's never looked happier and Techno couldn't help but think about how much the child had grown since escaping Dream. How proud he was of Tommy.

Then something else caught Techno's eye. Something dark on the back of someone's neck.

"Ranboo," he started, finally drawing attention to the fact that he was home. "What's that on your neck?"

Chapter End Notes

Hey guys! Thanks so much for reading this chapter, as always if you enjoyed please feel free to let me know! Comments are super motivational to me and really encourage me to keep this story going. Also thank you so much for over 1800 kudos and 27,000 hits! The

support I've been getting on this story is just absolutely insane! Also, I have a linktree set up that has links to my twitter and the Spotify playlists I have set up for both stories I'm writing <https://linktr.ee/batmansmom> and if that wasn't enough I also have a discord server! I'm planning on posting some cannon facts about the characters and the universe there that likely won't show up in this story on there! It's also meant to be a place for artists, writers, editors and readers to all come together to enjoy DreamsmP/SBI content together! If you want to join the rebellion rising up against me for my crimes or if you want sneak peaks at upcoming fics, then you should consider joining my discord! It's also where I'll be posting updates and announcements so if I'm unable to post a chapter that day that's where you'll know and I was thinking about starting to use it to get opinions on certain details like chapter titles and also whether I should post later in the day or earlier that kind of stuff. So here's the link to that <https://discord.gg/kn5fZhuM2e> feel free to join, thanks again for reading! Until next time <3

Doomsday

Chapter Summary

“And what are you going to do while Phil and I are focused on two people? There’s still five left, Dream included, you can’t be meaning to take on all of them by yourself,” Wilbur pointed out.

Techno gritted his teeth. “I’ll do what I have to. Hopefully we won’t be alone for long. With any luck, the Commission has already sent out the alert.”

Chapter Notes

So... uh... yeah I'm really sorry for this one. Uh if it tears your heart out let me know in the comments below! And um you uh you might need these *hands you a tissue box* anywaaaaay gotta run but uh if you need more of my writing after this chapter you should go check out one of my other stories! Peace <3

CW: Violence, Blood, Death, Panic Attacks

To my Discord: If you are part of the batbois and need some custom fluff therapy after this one just request it in the batbois channel and I'll provide it free of charge. If you're a traitor and you try and start another rebellion because of this I will just DM you parts of this chapter over and over again until you beg me to stop. Consider yourselves warned.

A Special Thanks To: h_e_sabers for beta reading!

See the end of the chapter for more [notes](#)

As Ranboo opened his mouth to answer Techno’s question, an explosion went off outside, causing the whole building to shake. The three pro heroes snapped their attention to the window, and just barely seen above the buildings, a smoke cloud was rising.

“Shit,” Wilbur mumbled while standing up, Phil following suit.

“Ranboo, Tubbo, take Tommy down to the basement level and stay there,” Techno ordered as Phil headed for the balcony. He looked the two heroes in training in the eye and said, “Whatever you do, keep him safe.” He waited until they both nodded, and Tubbo grabbed Tommy’s arm as the blond stared out the window in mute shock.

“C’mon Tommy we need to go,” Tubbo said, standing up and pulling the younger boy up with him.

“I um-” Tommy stuttered. “I need to get Clementine, and the Alliums.”

“You kept the alliums?” Ranboo asked, sounding touched.

“Boys focus, we do not have time for this conversation right now,” Phil snapped. As he opened the doors to the balcony, another explosion rocked the building. “Go get the plants and go downstairs.”

The three nodded and took off towards Tommy’s room to grab the plants. Techno did his best to set aside his worry for his brother and his friends. He had a job to do.

“Right, everyone have their comms on?” he asked, waiting for Phil and Wilbur to nod before continuing, “Phil I think you should fly ahead, do surveillance, tell us what we’re facing. Wilbur and I will have to get down to ground level and make our way there on foot. You guys have your suits on you?”

Wilbur nodded, pulling his grey mask out from the pocket of his super suit; he had been dressed and ready for patrol anyway. Phil nodded too, also pulling out a black face mask that covered his nose and mouth. Techno unzipped his bag and grabbed the boar skull mask, leaving the rest of the suit behind in his rush to address the threat.

“Alright, lets go,” Techno nodded, heading for the stairs with Wilbur right behind him. Phil went out to the balcony and jumped off, letting himself fall for a moment before spreading his wings and soaring up above the buildings and towards the smoke. It didn’t take long for Phil to find the source of the destruction.

“Tech, they have a shit ton of drones up here,” Phil said.

“Shit,” Techno mumbled, “Do they have the logo?”

“Yeah, it’s definitely him.”

“Is there any chance this is a solo attack?” Techno asked as he reached ground level and burst out onto the street. When he looked up, he could just barely see them: lines of drones in almost a grid like pattern, hidden by the storm clouds high above the city.

“I don’t think so Tech, there’s something else, the drones don’t just have his mark on them. They also have Dream’s and Quackity’s.”

Techno cursed under his breath and started sprinting towards where the smoke was coming from. “Right okay, call it in Phil. We’re going to need every hero in the city for an attack this big.”

“How many of them do you think there are?” Wilbur asked, keeping pace with Techno.

“Worst case scenario, Dream brought his whole team and Quackity brought his,” Techno sighed. “That would be around nine or ten people assuming that they haven’t grown at all in

the last two months.”

“Including Warden?”

“No,” Techno shook his head. “Warden will provide them with tech but he doesn’t join fights like this.”

“Okay what’s the best case scenario then? At a minimum how many are we fighting?”

“At least five,” Techno frowned, “Assuming Quackity just leant out his tech guy and didn’t want to join in on the chaos.”

“And what are the chances of that?”

“I’d say slim to none. Quackity isn’t the type to willingly take the backseat, not when he could cause chaos.”

“Fuck!” Wilbur exclaimed as they turned a corner. “What do we know about them all, powers wise?”

“Close to nothing,” Techno sighed. “We know 404 has a hijacking ability, Sapnap is likely the cause of the storm up there, and Dream has his revive ability obviously, but I have no idea what Punz or Callahan can do.”

“Guys I found the sight,” Phil interrupted. “We have seven villains and about forty injured civilians. They’ve taken down two buildings, and I think they’re setting up for a third.”

“Do you have eyes on which villains exactly?” Techno asked as he started to pick up the pace.

“Dream, Sapnap, 404, Punz, Callahan, Quackity, and Timescape.”

“Fuckin- Timescape? Really? They couldn’t have brought like Slimecicle or fuckin furry dude whatever his name is?” Wilbur groaned.

“You mean Fundy?”

“Yeah, fox boy,” he agreed, “They just had to bring the most annoying fucker to deal with?”

“Listen Wil- I mean Ghostbur, Timescape is a pain in the neck but you’re best equipped to deal with him,” Techno said as they made another turn. “You’re going to have to thrall him and take him out of commission before he can do any of his time shit. Phil, I think it would be best if you tried to take down Sapnap— avoid 404 at all costs. We do not need him hijacking you and raising an army of zombies using your power. We need to get rid of the cloud cover so the other heroes can focus on the bots.”

“And what are you going to do while Phil and I are focused on two people? There’s still five left, Dream included, you can’t be meaning to take on all of them by yourself,” Wilbur pointed out.

Techno gritted his teeth. "I'll do what I have to. Hopefully we won't be alone for long. With any luck, the Commission has already sent out the alert."

"Tech, I love you, but you cannot take on four people and Dream at the same time," Phil protested. "You don't even have a weapon-"

At this Techno held out his hand and whispered something under his breath, reaching into the air and pulling out a glowing, purple axe seemingly from out of nowhere.

"How the fuck-"

"I got Sam to enchant it for me a few weeks ago," Techno said. "Now I have a weapon, think I have a chance now, Zephyrus?"

There was a pause and then a reluctant sigh, "Give 'em hell Blood God, and I swear to god if you die-"

"I don't die Zephyrus," Techno interrupted. "Haven't you heard that by now? The Blood God never dies."

Tommy was going to die. He was entirely sure of it as he clutched Clementine and the Alliums to his chest, watching with growing fear as his two best friends duked it out right in front of him on the stairwell.

"What's wrong with him?" Tommy asked as Tubbo dodged another blow, Ranboo's normal green and red eyes were instead glowing a dark purple.

"I have no fucking clue," Tubbo answered as he ducked down and tried to sweep Ranboo's feet from under him. "C'mon Boo snap out of it!" he shouted as the enderman hybrid went down.

Ranboo did not snap out of it. If anything he only seemed to be growing angrier and angrier. Tommy flinched when the hybrid's jaw unhinged and he let out a terrible shrieking noise before teleporting behind Tubbo.

"Tubbo, behind you!" Tommy shouted. But Ranboo wasn't focused on Tubbo; instead, he turned and reached for Tommy.

Tubbo moved quickly and headbutted their friend in the side with enough force to send Ranboo into the wall. Tubbo watched, breathing hard as Ranboo got back up, seeming unaffected by the attack. "Fuck," he cursed, "Okay, I didn't want to have to do this to you, Boo, but you're not giving me many options." He held out his hands and focused, eyes darting to where he wanted his explosions to go off. "Tommy, get behind me!" he shouted, waiting for his friend to do as he said before he let his power go.

Ranboo went back down as five explosions went off at the same time, hitting him in what Tubbo hoped were non-fatal parts.

“How’d you do that?” Tommy asked as Tubbo grabbed his hand and dragged him down the rest of the stairs.

“I turned parts of his suit into explosives,” Tubbo sighed, glancing back at the crumpled form of his friend. “I didn’t want to have to do that, but we don’t have time to try and talk him out of whatever’s going on. We need to get you to safety”

“Tubbo-”

“Don’t,” Tubbo shook his head, “Don’t say anything, I don’t want to talk about it. The mission comes first.”

Tommy shut his mouth and followed Tubbo in silence. Finally, they ended up in the basement, in a secure metal room with no windows. Tommy tried his best not to burst into tears right then and there at the sight of the room.

He apparently hadn’t hidden his panic very well though, because Tubbo grabbed his hand and murmured, “It’s okay Tommy, we won’t be down here for very long. We just need to wait for your family to defeat the bad guys and then we’ll go right back up.”

Tommy nodded pathetically as he squeezed his eyes shut, trying not to think about how it felt like the walls were closing in on him.

“What’s your favorite tree, Tommy?” Tubbo asked as another explosion came from above.

“Uh it- it used to be Quercus Alnifolia- er I mean Golden oak tree but now- now it’s the uh the scarlet oak tree,” Tommy stuttered, taking a deep breath.

“And why is that Tommy?”

“Because of the one in the park,” he murmured, taking another deep breath. It wasn’t so bad with his eyes closed. “The one we sat under, I went and saw it again today with- with Wilbur.”

Tubbo squeezed his hand. “You guys got caught in the rain, right?”

“Yeah,” Tommy laughed weakly, “Yeah we did, it- I dragged him into a puddle.”

“What else happened?”

“Uh-”

He didn’t have time to finish the thought as the vroop of an enderman teleporting in and Tubbo’s startled yell made him open his eyes. In front of him was Ranboo, burned in several places from Tubbo’s bombs, with his eyes still glowing purple. Tubbo pushed Tommy behind him, lowering himself slightly into a fighting stance.

“Boo what are you doing?” Tubbo asked. The enderman hybrid didn’t respond; he just stared blankly at Tubbo. “Boo, you should have just stayed down. I don’t want to have to hurt you.”

For a moment the purple flickered as Ranboo, their Ranboo, came back to them. Through gritted teeth he mumbled, "I can't- I can't- Bo I don't have a choice. He's making me."

"Who's making you Boo?" Tubbo asked as he and Tommy took a step back.

"Dream," Ranboo answered, a few tears streaming down the enderman hybrid's face leaving burn marks behind. "He wants Tommy back- he wants me- he wants me to-" he cut himself off with a sob as the purple returned.

Tubbo frowned, "I'm sorry Boo, but I can't let you take him. Tommy is our friend." He held out his hands again. "I'm so sorry," he said as his eyes started to glow a bright yellow and he prepared to use the full extent of his ability.

Ranboo unhinged his jaw and let out that terrible shrieking noise again, disappearing in a flash of purple particles.

Tubbo lowered his hands. "What-"

He never got to finish the sentence as Ranboo teleported behind him, tossing him into one of the metal walls hard enough to dent it.

"TUBBO!!" Tommy screamed as the enderman hybrid teleported again, hovering over Tubbo as he pulled something out silver from the pocket of his suit. He flicked it open revealing a sharp blade and brought it down into Tubbo's chest over and over, ignoring Tubbo as he let out screams of pain. Tommy ran over, barreling into Ranboo and knocking him off of the goat hybrid.

The enderman hybrid stumbled a bit, tears streaming down his face though he didn't react at all to the injuries they left, as Tommy kneeled down next to his best friend. There was blood gushing from the several stab wounds in his chest as the older boy choked and gasped for air.

"No no no no no," Tommy mumbled, placing his hands over the wounds as best he could, trying to stifle the blood flow. "No Tubbo- Tubbo please I can't-"

Tubbo tried to say something, but no words came out, only whimpers of pain as Tommy felt blood stain his hands.

"You can't go, you have to stay awake," Tommy begged. "Please- please Tubbo you- you're the first friend I've had that's my age, the first friend I made after Techno saved me- you can't just - you can't- Don't leave me, please please don't leave me all alone again."

A few tears slipped from Tommy's eyes as the rising and falling of Tubbo's chest stopped.

"Please don't leave me," he murmured uselessly.

And for the first time since Tommy had met him, Tubbo didn't respond.

Hey guys! Thanks so much for reading this chapter, as always if you enjoyed please feel free to let me know! Comments are super motivational to me and really encourage me to keep this story going. Also thanks so much for over 1,900 kudos and 30,000 hits! The support on this story has been INSANE every step of the way and I have to thank you guys for that. I also have a linktree set up that has links to my twitter and the Spotify playlists I have set up for all of my different stories I'm writing <https://linktr.ee/batmansmom> and if that wasn't enough I also have a discord server! I'm planning on posting some cannon facts about the characters and the universe there that likely won't show up in this story on there! It's also meant to be a place for artists, writers, editors and readers to all come together to enjoy Dream SMP/SBI content together! If you want to join the rebellion rising up against me for my crimes or if you want sneak peaks at upcoming fics, then you should consider joining my discord! It's also where I'll be posting updates and announcements so if I'm unable to post a chapter that day that's where you'll know and I was thinking about starting to use it to get opinions on certain details like chapter titles and also whether I should post later in the day or earlier that kind of stuff. So here's the link to that <https://discord.gg/kn5fZhuM2e> feel free to join, thanks again for reading! Until next time <3

For My Brother (I'll Pay Any Price)

Chapter Summary

“Quackity” Techno growled, sending his axe back into the dimensional pocket he had originally summoned the weapon from. With Quackity, it was better to fight with his hands. The villain had the power to manipulate probabilities around objects, meaning Techno’s fists were much more likely to land a hit than his axe.

“Blood God, you know I think I’ll finally be able to get rid of you” Quackity said, twirling the pickaxe.

Chapter Notes

hey hey hey so last chapter seemed to upset you guys so uh.... TIME TO MAKE IT WORSE HAHAAHAHAHA

Also if you've been enjoying this story, please feel free to let me know in the comments, seriously it makes my whole day!

CW: Blood, death, dead bodies, violence, injury, manipulation, Dream

Note to my Discord: BRING THE TISSUES YOU'RE GOING TO NEED THEM!! Blame the rebellion for this chapter, they pushed me to do this. Batbois, if you need fluff, you know where to find me (love you guys).

A special thanks to: KJ for beta reading! Thanks for doin that!

See the end of the chapter for more [notes](#)

Tommy’s hands were stained with blood, it wasn’t the first time they had been, but this time felt different. After all, it wasn’t Tommy’s blood this time. This time it belonged to someone way more important than himself. Tubbo’s corpse was hauntingly pale and far too still, death did not suit his best friend.

Across the room, Ranboo’s eyes were flickering between their normal color and that awful purple, shock and grief helping him stall what would be inevitable. “You need to go-” He choked out, voice shaking as he fought to keep himself in control “you need to run Tommy, I can’t- I can’t fight him for much longer- and I don’t-” he sobbed, tears leaving more burns on

his face “I don’t want you to end up like-” he couldn’t bring himself to finish the sentence, he didn’t need to.

Tommy reluctantly pulled his hands away from the wounds he had been trying to staunch, as he did he felt a familiar buzz in the back of his head. He paused, looking down at Tubbo and then at his own hands as an idea started to form in his head. A stupid idea.

He turned back towards Ranboo.

“Take me to him”

Ranboo’s eyes widened a bit “no- no absolutely not- Tommy please I’ve already lost one friend today. Just get yourself somewhere safe”

Tommy glared at the enderman hybrid “if you don’t take me, I’ll just try and find him myself and with all the explosions that have been going off, something tells me that that is the far more dangerous option.”

Ranboo flinched back a bit from the intensity of Tommy’s glare but he still shook his head “No. I won’t have any part-” he was cut off as the purple returned once again and he watched in horror as he moved towards Tommy against his will.

Tommy moved forward to meet him, not even hesitating as the hero in training reached for him, intent on taking him back to the man that had held Tommy captive his whole life. In a flash of purple particles, they were gone leaving behind them the body of their best friend, two broken flower pots and the knowledge that nothing would ever be the same again.

Techno thought the battle had been going pretty well, that was until Wilbur got himself knocked out. Then everything kind of went to shit. *At least he managed to take out Timescape* Techno thought to himself as he dodged another bolt of lightning from Sapnap *but*

it would have been nice if he could have passed out at a more convenient time. He twirled his axe, the blade now glowing a dark purple, Techno's wither effect having spread to it. He swung the axe as 404 got a little too close for comfort and risked a glance to the side where Phil was making sure that Punz didn't finish Wilbur off while he was unable to defend himself.

More heroes should be here by now. Techno frowned *what the hell is the commission even doing?*

As if they had heard his question, Eret greeted him from the side of the street "hello Blood God"

He snapped his head to the side to look at Eret, whose usual sunglasses were gone, their completely white eyes on full display for the public to see. "Prism" Techno responded in relief "where is everyone else?"

"Everyone else?" Eret cocked their head to the side as a sly grin spread across their face "I'm afraid no one else is coming Blood God"

Techno's hand gripped his axe tighter at the words "What do you mean no one else is coming?"

"They're a bit incapacitated at the moment" Eret shrugged "I'm afraid my power did a number on them"

Techno's heart dropped as he assessed the situation. Wilbur was down, they had no back up, Eret was a traitor and they were facing some of the worst villains on the planet. He glanced over at Phil, he could tell the other hero had reached the same conclusion. They had no hope. As he went to focus back on Eret, a flash of green caught his eye. Dream hadn't joined the fight, he had only sat to the side and watched. Techno gritted his teeth, the odds of them winning didn't matter, they had no other choice than to pull it off. They couldn't give up now. Not while everyone needed them, not while Tommy needed them to win.

Tommy deserved to have a life where he didn't have to be afraid that Dream would reappear and Techno had just been presented with an opportunity to end it all for good. Losing wasn't an option.

Techno made eye contact with Phil, no words said but the message was clear. They were winning this fight. With that, Techno let out a battle cry and swung the axe at Eret.

Chaos followed quickly, the attack having taken Eret off guard as Techno's axe bit into their arm. With a yelp, Eret backed up, his eyes didn't glow but his hands did as Eret vanished from sight. Unfortunately for Eret, the dumbass had forgotten why Techno's axe was glowing. They reappeared a moment later, spasming from the pain as Wither worked it's way through their body, the cut on bleed sluggishly on their arm.

Techno turned away, Eret was down but they still had six more villains to take care of. A few streets away another explosion rang out and Techno scowled, *that's right* he thought *we still have the drones to take care of too. That's likely why Callahan left, he's probably the one controlling them.* He heard movement behind him and whipped around, lifting his axe in time to block a blow from Quackity.

The hybrid grinned at him as he pushed against Techno's weapon trying to knock away the axe. Normally something like this wouldn't work. But Quackity wasn't a normal opponent, so Techno wasn't terribly surprised when he found the Axe slip and his grip loosen allowing him to knock the weapon aside. Techno dropped it as he ducked under Quackity's next attack, the crazy villain was using a *pickaxe* of all things. Techno wasn't entirely sure where Quackity had even gotten the thing.

"Quackity" Techno growled, sending his axe back into the dimensional pocket he had originally summoned the weapon from. With Quackity, it was better to fight with his hands. The villain had the power to manipulate probabilities around objects, meaning Techno's fists were much more likely to land a hit than his axe.

"Blood God, you know I think I'll finally be able to get rid of you" Quackity said, twirling the pickaxe.

Techno scoffed "you really think you can take me down? Even with the advantage in your favor," he paused, allowing himself to shift into his piglin form "I'd say the probability is

low”

“What do you say we find out?” Quackity said, bringing the pickaxe down again.

Techno dodged to the side, reaching forward and grabbing the handle of the pickaxe, yanking it away from Quackity throwing the villain off balance. Quackity stumbled forward as Techno readjusted the pickaxe, bringing it up and ripping the tip of it up Quackity’s face. Techno grabbed Quackity and tossed him to the side. The villain landed next to Eret with a groan, hand coming up to cover the deep cut the pickaxe had made on his face.

Quackity picked himself up, wiping the blood off of his face, one eye closed as the other focused on Techno “you motherfucker” he snarled “I’m going to kill you, I’m going to fucking kill you and the rest of your fucking family when I’m done”

Techno bristled at the threat, thinking back to a terrified Tommy who had already died far too many times “Touch them and I’ll take this pickaxe, and put it through your teeth Quackity”

“I’d like to see you try”

Techno narrowed his eyes, a tense moment passing before both men charged forward fully intending on ending the other. Techno was faster though, bringing the pickaxe down in the same spot he had before, letting it dig a little deeper. Hearing Quackity cry out in pain was like music to his ears. He shifted his grip up, using the handle to knock the villain out, he tossed the pickaxe aside and summoned his axe once more, intending on making sure Quackity would never be able to make true on his threat.

Phil screaming in pain stopped him from making that final blow as he turned towards where his dad had been fighting. Sapnap had managed to get the upper hand, using his ability to electrocute the winged hero. On the ground near them was Punz and 404, both clearly unconscious, but alive.

Techno watched, heart in his throat as Sapnap managed to pin Phil down, digging his knee into Phil’s back and driving a knife into one of Phil’s wings to keep it from moving. Techno

lunged forward to engage, to knock Sapnap off and get him away from his family, but he was quickly intercepted.

“Get out of my way Dream” Techno snapped swinging his axe at the masked villain who easily dodged.

“No, I think this fight is between you and me” Dream said calmly, Techno cursed internally.

Dream hasn't had to fight anyone yet, but I just had two fights, Techno took a deep breath, I'm at a disadvantage and I have more at risk. He tightened his grip on his axe as he swung again at the villain but I have no choice, I need to win this.

Dream dodged again, pulling out his own sword which glowed an obnoxious neon green that told Techno there was likely a poison enchantment on it. Instead of dodging, Dream started blocking his blows and returning with his own attacks. They fell into a familiar dance, each party taking turns attacking and blocking, each one trying to get the upper hand.

“You want to know something interesting about my powers, Technoblade?” Dream asked, attempting to distract the hero from the fight at hand. “It's not just simple revival, no no no”

Techno stumbled back a bit as he blocked a swing from Dream, pushing back and attacking again. He tried to block out what Dream was saying, he couldn't afford to get distracted now.

“You see, when I bring someone back from the dead, I claim their soul” Dream continued as Techno dodged the next attack. “And when I claim a soul, it's mine forever”

Techno swung the axe again, managing to graze Dream's arm with it as the other continued to speak.

“So it doesn't matter if you kill me now,” Dream said “no matter what you do, I'll always be a permanent part of Tommy's life because he'll always belong to *me*”

“He isn’t something you can own” Techno shot back, wincing as he blocked another blow, this one coming down with a bit more strength than the other ones had “he’s a person, not an object”

“He’s more like a racoon actually, or maybe an annoying dog” Dream sidestepped, avoiding Techno’s next swing “I wouldn’t count him as person, he’s far too dumb to do more than follow orders.”

“If that’s really what you think then you’re the dumb one” Techno growled blocking Dream’s sword before it could cut into his shoulder.

Dream ignored the comeback “you know what I think is interesting,” he said “what will happen when Tommy dies, permanently.”

The sentence threw Techno off, he faltered and Dream took the opportunity to kick him in the stomach, making him stumble back a bit.

“His soul is mine” Dream continued “which is why when I kill him, he doesn’t pass on. It’s why the revive ability works on him. But one day, sooner or later, Tommy’s going to die and I’m not going to be there to bring him back. I wonder where he’ll go?”

Techno blocked again, lunging back furiously, trying not to think about what Dream was implying.

“Isn’t it sad to think about?” he asked “that even in death, your brother will never be able to rest. That you’ll only ever be able to see him in this world, because he won’t be able to join you in the next”

“I’m not really a religious person” Techno forced himself to stay as he focused on the fight “I don’t know that I believe there is a next.”

They were evenly matched going blow for blow, until something popped up in the corner of Techno's eye that he couldn't ignore.

He turned his head slightly as Ranboo and Tommy teleported onto the battlefield.

"Tommy?" Techno asked in horror as the enderman hybrid held his little brother tight, keeping the blond from moving. The distraction provided Dream the opportunity he needed, he lunged forward, slashing Techno across his stomach before kicking him in the chest sending him stumbling back.

Techno didn't see it coming when Sapnap took advantage of his temporary distraction and sent a bolt of lightning his way. Techno spasmed as the pain hit him but he clenched his jaw tight, determined not to say a word as he fell to his knees, the axe falling uselessly out of his hand.

"Tommy" Dream greeted and Techno tried to ignore the nauseous feeling that came with hearing that monster say his brother's name.

"Dream" Tommy said, Techno could hear the fear in his voice.

"Thank you Ranboo for the help," Dream said, releasing control of the hybrid who collapsed on the floor having overused his ability. "Not that you had much of a choice"

Techno lifted his head enough to glare at the demon as Dream opened his arms towards Tommy. "C'mon now Tommy, where's my hello?"

Tommy hesitated, taking a small step forward, looking lost as to whether or not he should go to Dream now that Ranboo was no longer holding him in place.

"Tommy" Techno choked out and he forced himself into a standing position "get behind me"

“Tommy” Dream said, a bit more sharply than before “come here, don’t make this worse for yourself”

Tommy was looking between the two of them, unsure of what action to take.

“Tommy, don’t listen to him” Techno said grabbing his axe “I can protect you, you don’t need to be afraid of him anymore”

“Tommy you’re smarter than that” Dream argued “you know I’ve won, now come here, come home.”

Tommy took another hesitant step towards Dream, Techno hated the way Tommy was looking at the monster with so much fear.

“Tommy,” he paused, waiting until Tommy made eye contact with him “you’re going to be okay, I promise I will keep you safe, but you have to help me out a little here.”

Dream laughed “do you really think he can do that Tommy? Look at him, he can barely stand! It’s over, in a few minutes this whole place is going to go sky high, I’ve won”

Tommy was still looking at Techno “Can you save everyone?” he asked looking at Techno “or just me?”

Techno opened his mouth to answer but Dream beat him to it “Tommy, enough of this. Going with Techno is only going to get him killed. Techno tried, he really did, but we both know in the end it was never going to be enough”

“Tommy please just- just let me protect you” Techno begged “please-” *don’t make me lose you again.*

“Tommy” Dream said “it’s useless, you know that”

Techno's heart dropped as Tommy looked down and quietly said "I know"

"Good." Dream nodded "Now at my side"

Tommy didn't hesitate this time, walking towards Dream averting his eyes away from Techno as he did. Dream pulled him into a hug, that looked a little too tight to be friendly.

"I missed you" Dream said pulling away and grabbing Tommy's chin harshly, making the blond look him in the eyes "Never do that again"

Tommy gulped "yes Dream" he murmured as Dream released him, turning his attention back to Technoblade with a smug look. Techno didn't have the strength to react when Dream lunged towards him with the sword, burying the blade into Techno's chest.

He pulled it back out with a sickening slurp sound and Techno fell pathetically at the villain's feet. Techno heard Tommy gasp and he looked up, his vision was starting to fog up but he could still make out his brother's face. There were tears streaming down his cheeks but there was also a look of grim determination, something Techno hadn't expected to see. Dream laughed above him.

"Now this was how it was always meant to be" The villain grinned as Techno turned his attention back to the masked man "with Tommy at my side, and you at my feet" he turned, wrapping an arm around Tommy's shoulders. Tommy, who still looked far too small. Tommy, who still came to Techno first when his nightmares wouldn't let him sleep. Tommy who was terrified of elevators. Tommy who had endless questions. Tommy who could complete thousand piece puzzles in twenty minutes. Tommy who still didn't know what a TV was but could name over fifty different types of oak trees. Tommy who was bright and funny and curious and trusting. Tommy who was *everything*.

Tommy, who was about to walk away from them, go back willingly to the cage he had been trapped in for the last ten years, because Techno had failed.

“Let’s go Tommy” Dream said leading the fourteen year old away from the hero and back towards Ranboo “lets get you home”

“Wait!” Wilbur cried, staggering to his feet, still looking disoriented from the hit to the head he had taken earlier “wait, Dream I want to make a deal!”

Dream paused and Techno could see the horrified look on his father’s face as he struggled harder against Sapnap.

“Don’t do it Wilbur, don’t be stupid!” Phil cried out before Sapnap shoved a piece of cloth in his mouth, muffling the words.

Wilbur ignored Phil, standing up a bit taller as he approached Dream “I want to make a deal” he repeated.

Dream looked at Wilbur, tilting his head to the side as he considered the words “and what is it you’re asking for?”

Wilbur swallowed nervously “give my brother his soul back, and let him stay here with Phil and Techno. In exchange I’ll give you anything you want.”

“That’s a stupid deal Wilbur” Techno spoke up trying to pick himself back up, but his arms had gone weak in a way that told him the poison on Dream’s sword had started to spread.

“Anything I want?” Dream said, seeming amused.

“Anything at all” Wilbur nodded “anything I can give you, in exchange for Tommy’s freedom”

“Wilbur-” Tommy shook his head looking close to tears “don’t- don’t do this”

“Even your own soul?” Dream asked and Wilbur didn’t hesitate to nod.

“For my brother,” he paused looking Tommy in the eyes as he smiled reassuring at the younger boy “i’ll pay any price”

Chapter End Notes

Hey guys! Thanks so much for reading this chapter, as always if you enjoyed please feel free to let me know! Comments are super motivational to me and really encourage me to keep this story going. Also thanks so much for over 2100 kudos and 35,000 hits. I also have a linktree set up that has links to my twitter and the Spotify playlists I have set up for all of my different stories I'm writing <https://linktr.ee/batmansmom> and if that wasn't enough I also have a discord server! I'm planning on posting some cannon facts about the characters and the universe there that likely won't show up in this story on there! It's also meant to be a place for artists, writers, editors and readers to all come together to enjoy Dream SMP/SBI content together! If you want to join the rebellion rising up against me for my crimes or if you want sneak peaks at upcoming fics, then you should consider joining my discord! It's also where I'll be posting updates and announcements so if I'm unable to post a chapter that day that's where you'll know and I was thinking about starting to use it to get opinions on certain details like chapter titles and also whether I should post later in the day or earlier that kind of stuff. So here's the link to that <https://discord.gg/kn5fZhuM2e> feel free to join, thanks again for reading! Until next time <3

The Death of a Brother

Chapter Summary

“Tommy,” Ranboo said worriedly as the red lights turned green. “Tommy, Christmas is coming and I don’t think we’re going to like what they brought us.”

“What the fuck is Christmas?”

“I’ll explain later.”

Alright chat step aside, I got this one.

Tommy nearly lost all of his focus right there, the power started to fade for a moment before he pulled it forward again. “Tubbo?”

Chapter Notes

Second to last chapter!! We got one more and then the fics over!! If you've been enjoying it let me know in the comments below!! love you guys <3

CW: Death, Blood, Injury, Explosions, Dream

A special note to my discord: BEFORE READING THIS DM ME AND LIVE REACT AS YOU READ PLEASE ITLL BE SO FUNNY (jk jk... unless?)

A special thanks to h_e_sabers for beta reading this chapter, holy shit it wouldn't be nearly this good without you!

See the end of the chapter for more [notes](#)

Tommy held his breath, watching as Dream studied Wilbur for a moment. He felt his stomach drop when a twisted smile appeared on the villain’s face. And then he laughed.

“Oh Wilbur, stupid stupid Wilbur. What good would killing you do?” Dream scoffed, “What use do I have for your soul? No, my goal from the start was to see you and your family suffer, the way you made me suffer.”

Tommy flinched as Dream raised his voice and Wilbur’s face paled slightly at the proclamation, then his eyebrows furrowed together in a way Tommy had come to learn meant Wilbur was angry.

“My family has suffered!” Wilbur yelled back. “I lost my brother too, far before you lost yours. In fact, the only reason your brother is gone is because *of what he took from my family* .” Wilbur’s eyes started glowing as his power amplified his voice. “You of all people don’t get to play the victim because your brother had to face the consequences of his own actions. If you had returned Tommy earlier instead of keeping him as some sort of *sick plaything* then maybe *maybe* I’d have a bit of sympathy for you. But you didn’t. So really, if you think about it, the only person you have to blame for your brother’s death *is yourself* .”

“Sounds like you’re projecting Wilbur,” Dream rolled his eyes. “I know the deal you made with ExDee, the only reason your brother died was because of your own actions.”

Wilbur’s fists clenched but as he opened his mouth to argue, Sapnap seemed to have had enough of this conversation. Wilbur fell to the ground spasming as electricity made its way through his body.

“Enough of this,” Sapnap sighed. “We got the kid, can we blow everything up now?”

Dream snickered, “Impatient as ever. Make sure the bird stays pinned and grab 404, would you? Punz can find his own way back,” Dream said dismissively as Sapnap nodded, driving another knife into Phil’s wings to keep him pinned. He stood and walked over to his unconscious friend, lifting him easily. Dream headed towards where Ranboo had collapsed.

“Come on Tommy, we’re going home,” he said, not glancing back to make sure the blond was following.

Tommy stayed frozen in place, looking at Techno who was bleeding out in the concrete and then at Wilbur, who was rendered unconscious for a second time in the last thirty minutes, and then at Phil, who was giving him a desperate, pleading look. He took a deep breath and turned back towards where Dream was walking away.

He had to do this.

He wasn't going back.

Tommy chased after Dream, gathering his courage as he reached forward and grabbed Dream's wrist, causing the villain to turn and strike Tommy against his cheek, sending the boy to the ground.

Dream sighed, "I'm not holding your hand Tommy. You're still in trouble for running. Just because you agreed to come back, doesn't mean you aren't going to be taught a lesson when we get home."

Tommy looked up at Dream as the villain rolled his eyes and started walking away again.

"Actually, Dream," Tommy said, taking a deep breath as he stood. "I only came back because you had something I needed." And with that he reached into the back of his head, where Dream's power was slotted nicely next to Tubbo's and he brought it forward, just a bit. His eyes glowed a familiar white as the revive power was activated just enough to show off that he had it.

Glancing back he could see Techno grinning smugly, a proud look on his face at Tommy's defiance.

Dream stopped staring in shock at Tommy "That's- that shouldn't be possible. How the hell-"

“Well you did compare him to a raccoon earlier Dream,” Techno smirked. “Told you he was smart.”

Dream growled and looked behind Tommy at Sapnap and nodded, looking a bit reluctant. “I didn’t want to get rid of you so quickly, but it looks like it’s inevitable. That’s okay Tommy, maybe we can try again when you learn your lesson about *stealing* from someone who's done nothing but provide for you.”

“Oh cut the bullshit,” Tommy growled, hands curling into fists. “The only thing you’ve done for me is *take away what I could’ve had* .”

“Sapnap, do it now,” Dream said, and Sapnap grinned, holding his hands out as his eyes started to glow.

“It’s so rare I get the chance to just fry someone, thanks being idiot Tommy,” Sapnap taunted as Tommy turned around just in time to see Sapnap release his power, sending just enough electricity towards him to stop his heart.

“TOMMY!!” Phil shouted.

Tommy squeezed his eyes shut and tensed waiting for the pain to hit him, but it never did. Instead, he heard someone fall behind him.

“Holy shit,” Phil said in disbelief as he stared at his son.

Tommy opened his eyes and looked down at himself, and stared at what he found. Instead of his normally opaque form, all of him was very much transparent. He could see the *ground* through the faint outline of his feet.

Techno was grinning. “Ghostinnit has joined the game.”

Tommy looked up at Sapnap who was staring at him in just as much shock as everyone else.

“ *What the fuck,* ” Sapnap whispered.

Tommy turned to see Dream unconscious, still spasming from the electricity that had hit him straight on.

Techno was cackling and coughing up blood. “Serves you right dumbass! First rule of anything is prepare for it all to go impossibly wrong. What a loser.”

Tommy turned back to Sapnap who was glaring daggers at Tommy. “If I had time to kill you,” he growled, “I would. But I don’t want to be here when everything goes to shit,” he said. And with that, he ran off towards the nearest way out of the city.

“Oh right,” Techno mumbled deliriously, “Forgot about the sky bombs.”

Tommy looked up at the drones fearfully, “Sky bombs? Are those like Tubbo’s nukes?”

“Kinda,” Techno said, “But less friendly and more deadly.”

“Oh,” Tommy said, shoulders dropping. “Right.”

“Mate, mind helping me out a bit?” Phil asked from where he was still pinned to the ground as Tommy tried to get his thoughts together.

“Yeah sorry,” he apologized, taking a few steps forward and trying to ignore how his limbs felt like jello. Somewhere along the way he became solid again and almost tripped and fell. Luckily, his older brother was there to cushion his fall.

Wilbur groaned below him. “Oh, what the fuck,” he whined as he pushed Tommy off of him. “Oowww everything fuckin hurts.”

“Wilbur, help your brothers please,” Phil said as Wilbur sat up reluctantly and looked around.

“What- what the fuck happened when I was out?” Wilbur asked, catching sight of a very unconscious Dream.

“Ghostinnit,” Techno said.

“Ah,” Wilbur nodded, looking down at his little brother who had made no effort to pick himself back up “Okay, so I’m the only stable one in the family right now?”

“Well I wouldn’t say that,” Phil said. “Honestly, even with as delirious as Techno is, I’d say he’s probably still more stable than you.”

“That’s just rude.”

“Sky bombs,” Techno reminded. “Still gotta save the city”

“Okay, so you have a point,” Wilbur said, standing and making his way towards Phil. He bent down and pulled the knives loose as gently as he could.

Phil sat up, wincing as the wounds bled sluggishly, matting his feathers in a way that Phil knew would make washing them a pain later. But he had more important things to focus on as he stood up “You get Tommy, I’ll check on Techno. Try and wake Ranboo if you can,” he said.

Wilbur nodded and headed back to where he had left the younger boy, he took one look at the exhaustion on Tommy’s face and simply scooped him up before heading towards Ranboo.

Phil knelt at Techno's side, trying to hide his panic as he saw the pool of blood underneath his son and the ugly greenish tint that had taken to the skin surrounding the wounds Dream had left with his sword. "Hey mate," he greeted softly as he gently lifted Techno up, careful of his wounds. It was an interesting sight considering that Techno was about seven inches taller than him.

"I told you, Technoblade never dies," Techno mumbled, letting his head rest against his father's chest as Phil held him close.

"Yeah you- good job Tech," Phil murmured. "You did great, I'm so proud of you," he choked out, trying to keep the grief from showing on his face. He didn't need to activate his powers to see that his son was dying, his soul was fading from this world.

"You gotta save the city- save Tommy and Wil," Techno said as his eyes fell closed.

"I will Tech, it's okay, you did great," Phil repeated. "You just rest up okay? We'll take it from here."

Techno didn't respond as Phil stood shakily, arms straining under the weight and the knowledge that he would have to mourn for another son.

At least they would have a body to bury this time.

Wilbur set Tommy back down when they reached Ranboo, he grabbed the unconscious teen by his shoulders and shook him vigorously. When the enderman hybrid finally opened his eyes, he was met by a glaring Wilbur and pained looking Tommy and the worst headache he ever had. He looked around, trying to gather his bearings, and paused in shock at the sight of Dream's unmoving form.

“Ranboo,” Wilbur said, turning the hero in training’s attention back to him. “Ranboo can you teleport?”

“Uh,” Ranboo blinked up at Wilbur before nodding a bit. “Sure yeah- where- where to?”

“Up,” Wilbur said, pointing at the line of drones above them.

Ranboo frowned a bit. “Ah,” he said. “Sorry, I don’t think I can teleport more than one person right now.”

“That’s okay,” Wilbur turned back towards where his dad and older brother were. “Ph- or uh Zephyrus, how’s Blood God looking?”

“I think you can stop with the hero names Wilbur,” Tommy pointed out. “Pretty sure the whole secret identity thing is gone.”

“Yeah, no, Tech’s uh, Tech’s down for the time being,” Phil shouted back, his voice shaking slightly.

Wilbur paused but there wasn’t time for him to decipher what that meant, so instead he just swore under his breath and tried to think. “Damn, without Techno I don’t know how we’re going to destroy those things,” he said. “My power isn’t strong enough right now to take down all of them.”

“I could do it,” Tommy said softly. “Or well, Tubbo’s power could do it.”

“Tommy, I never thought I’d say this but you are a genius.” Then Wilbur frowned, “Wait, how did you get Tubbo’s power?”

“I took it from his body after he died,” Tommy said numbly while Wilbur just stared at him.

“Tubbo’s dead?”

“Yeah. But I’m planning on fixing that.”

“Is that why you wanted me to teleport you to Dream so badly?” Ranboo asked in disbelief.
“Seriously?”

“You went to Dream willingly?” Wilbur asked furiously, and then he turned to Ranboo “Wait, you *teleported* him here?”

Ranboo flinched back a bit at Wilbur’s harsh tone. “It’s a long story-”

“One we don’t have time to tell,” Tommy interrupted.

“Right,” Wilbur took a deep breath. “Okay, here’s the plan. Ranboo, you’re going to teleport Tommy up there. Tommy, you’re going to blow up one of the drones, and then you two are going to teleport back down and take cover. The drones are close enough that one of them exploding should set the rest off and since they’re already carrying bombs, that makes them pretty easy to set off.”

“Right, let’s do it” Tommy nodded, eyes glowing a noxious yellow color,- the same color Tubbo’s had when he activated his ability.

“Right,” Ranboo reached forward and grabbed Tommy’s arm, teleporting the two of them up onto one of the skyscrapers in the city. Tommy immediately set his sights on the closest drone and raised his arms the way he saw Tubbo do.

“Alright chat,” Tommy said. “Walk me through this.”

It's simple enough, they responded. All you have to do is look at what you want to explode, and then pull the trigger.

“What trigger?” Tommy asked, frowning.

Your internal trigger, duh.

“Yeah that clears absolutely nothing up.”

Around them the drones all started glowing red, a strange whirring sound coming from them as Ranboo took a step back.

“Tommy hurry up,” he said anxiously.

“Shut it boob boy,” Tommy shot back. “Chat, please explain.”

You know? Your internal trigger? What you use to activate your powers?

“This is completely different, activating my trigger will only make me steal Ranboo’s dumb power.”

“I take offense to that.”

“Not the time.”

Just think about how much you wanna destroy everything and that should work, pretty sure that's what Tubbo does!

“But I don’t want to destroy everything, chat, I just want to destroy this specific thing.”

Wow you’re lamer than we thought.

“Tommy,” Ranboo said worriedly as the red lights turned green. “Tommy, Christmas is coming and I don’t think we’re going to like what they brought us.”

“What the fuck is Christmas?”

“I’ll explain later.”

Alright chat step aside, I got this one.

Tommy nearly lost all of his focus right there, the power started to fade for a moment before he pulled it forward again. “Tubbo?”

Yeah bossman it’s me, crazy right? Now I’m one of the weird voices.

“Tubbo I’m gonna bring you back,” Tommy swore. “I promise, I’m gonna bring you back but-”

But you need to make sure everyone else doesn’t die first, don’t worry man I got your back. Here’s what you have to do.

Tommy’s eyebrows furrowed in concentration as he listened carefully to Tubbo’s instructions, adjusting his stance and his arms slightly as the drones lights started flashing.

“Tommy that doesn’t look good”.

“Shut up,” Tommy mumbled. “I’m concentrating.”

Alright, ready?

Tommy nodded, forcing every bit of Tubbo’s power to the front.

3

2

1

Fire!

A shock of pain burst through Tommy’s arms forcing him to stumble back. In front of them the drone he had been aiming for exploded.

“YES!!!” Tommy cheered, grinning at Ranboo who smiled back before turning back to the drones as another one exploded, and then another.

“Uh oh, we should probably take cover.”

“Agreed,” Tommy nodded, grabbing onto Ranboo’s arm. “Go go go go go!”

Ranboo squeezed his eyes shut and teleported them both back to the ground where Wilbur was waiting. He didn’t open them right away, more focused on not collapsing as Tommy and Wilbur dragged him down somewhere he presumed was safe.

“Where is Techno and dad?” Tommy asked, looking up at Wilbur.

“They went to find cover and get Techno’s injuries treated,” Wilbur said over the roar of explosions above them. Tommy flinched slightly when a drone piece hit the ground right next to him.

“Boo, you up for one more teleport?”

“Uh,” Ranboo groaned. “I- I don’t think so Tommy.”

“What if I tell you it’s to bring Tubbo back to life?”

Ranboo perked up a bit, shoving the weak nauseous feeling into the back of his mind. “Yeah, I think I can do that.”

“Let’s go then,” Tommy grinned. “We have a friend to save.”

“I’m coming too,” Wilbur declared, and Ranboo groaned at the thought of having to teleport all three of them to Tubbo.

“I don’t think I can do that.”

“I’ll give you a boost,” Wilbur said, resting a hand on Ranboo’s shoulders.

Wilbur hummed something under his breath, eyes glowing as Ranboo sat up a bit straighter, some of the fatigue fading.

“Why didn’t you do that earlier?” he asked with a frown, looking up at Wilbur who glared back at him.

“Because you admitted to teleporting my brother right into the hands of the worst villain in the world,” he said coolly and Ranboo winced a bit. “I felt you deserved to suffer a little.”

“Fair enough,” Ranboo mumbled, grabbing onto Tommy’s arm and, after a moment of hesitation, Wilbur’s arm, focusing on the basement of the apartment building where they had left Tubbo’s body.

It was exactly as they had left it, broken flower pots to the side of the room and Tubbo’s body sitting in a pool of blood.

Wilbur winced at the sight of his student so torn up as Tommy immediately ran over to Tubbo.

“Okay,” he said, taking a deep breath. “We only have one shot at this. If it doesn’t work we’ll have to go back to Dream so I can steal his ability again.”

You got it Tommy, Tubbo’s voice echoed in his head. Bring me back big man.

“On it Tubbo, Chat? Walk me through it,” Tommy said as he placed his hands on Tubbo’s chest.

Wilbur watched in silent awe as Tommy’s eyes and hands started glowing a brilliant white and Tubbo’s injuries started closing and healing. As they did, a streak of Tubbo’s brown hair slowly faded until it was almost the same shade as Tommy’s. It took several minutes but soon enough, the glow faded and Tubbo sat up coughing and gasping for air.

Tommy grinned and pulled his best friend into a hug.

“Welcome back Tubbo,” he murmured as Ranboo joined in, wrapping his arms around both of them murmuring apology after apology.

“Good to be back,” Tubbo smiled, reaching up and wiping a stray tear from Ranboo’s cheek. “I saw you guys got to beat villain ass, next time wait for me before you decide to go blow something up.”

Ranboo laughed, sniffing as tears burned his cheeks for the third time that day. “Tell you what, when this is all over I’ll teleport you wherever you want and you can blow up as much stuff up as your heart desires.”

Tubbo laughed as Tommy pulled away from the hug, though the other two boys stayed latched onto each other. “You’re going to regret saying that.”

“Probably,” Ranboo agreed, pulling Tubbo closer.

Wilbur smiled a bit to himself before kneeling down next to the remains of Clementine and the alliums. He lifted the alliums carefully and then watched in surprise as Clementine’s soul flickered into view. “Hello Clementine,” he greeted, scooping up the soil that the soul originated from. Maybe everything would be okay after all.

Chapter End Notes

Hey guys! Thanks so much for reading this chapter, as always if you enjoyed please feel free to let me know! Comments are super motivational to me and really encourage me to keep this story going. Also thanks so much for over 2200 kudos and 41,000 hits. This is the second to last chapter so if you were here before it was completed, claim your spot now! I also have a linktree set up that has links to my twitter and the Spotify playlists I have set up for all of my different stories I'm writing <https://linktr.ee/batmansmom> and if that wasn't enough I also have a discord server! I'm planning on posting some cannon facts about the characters and the universe there that likely won't show up in this story on there! It's also meant to be a place for artists, writers, editors and readers to all come together to enjoy Dream SMP/SBI content together! If you want to join the rebellion rising up against me for my crimes or if you want sneak peaks at upcoming fics, then

you should consider joining my discord! It's also where I'll be posting updates and announcements so if I'm unable to post a chapter that day that's where you'll know and I was thinking about starting to use it to get opinions on certain details like chapter titles and also whether I should post later in the day or earlier that kind of stuff. So here's the link to that <https://discord.gg/kn5fZhuM2e> feel free to join, thanks again for reading! Until next time <3

The Embrace of a Mother

Chapter Summary

When Technoblade opened his eyes, he was confused. He was sure he was awake, but it was impossible for him to be here, places like this only existed in stories and myths. He was standing on nothing, floating in a room of endless night, the only light brought by distant stars. His breath caught in his throat as he recognized it from Phil's vague descriptions of the void. The inbetween, where souls go when their bodies die.

“Technoblade,”

Chapter Notes

Here it is. The final chapter for The Skies We Seek. I'm not going to lie to you, I cried when I finished writing. This has been such an amazing journey for me, the support has been overwhelming from the beginning. I have loved writing this story, I have loved every step of it and the amazing community that has been built because of it. I'm so endlessly thankful for all you. Thank you so much, enjoy the chapter.

A message to my discord: <https://discord.gg/kn5fZhuM2e>

I love you guys, I love our community and I hope it keeps growing. If yall wanna live react to the chapter I'd have an absolute blast reading it. Thank you for all of the motivation you've given me to complete this story. It's crazy looking at how much we have grown in the last month. Get excited because there is so much more to come.

A special thank you to:

F0rsynthiaa

Arson Amy

Raccooninnit

For beta reading this chapter, I loved reading your reactions and getting your feedback.

See the end of the chapter for more [notes](#)

When Technoblade opened his eyes, he was confused. He was sure he was awake, but it was impossible for him to be here, places like this only existed in stories and myths. He was standing on nothing, floating in a room of endless night, the only light brought by distant stars. His breath caught in his throat as he recognized it from Phil's vague descriptions of the void. The inbetween, where souls go when their bodies die.

“Technoblade,”

He turned, standing behind him with a gentle smile on her face was a woman with large golden wings and long black hair. Braided into her hair was a single black feather that Techno recognized in an instant as one that had belonged to his father. Maybe Phil's stories had some truth to them after all, because Techno easily recognized her based on the description Phil gave when he talked of his flights to the void.

Kristen, goddess of death, queen of the void and guider of souls. The one who gifted Phil his powers and allowed him to become a hero.

“Goddess?” Kristen spoke, “Is that what they’re calling us now? In my time we were called Starbornes”

“Can you read my mind?” Techno asked, eyebrows furrowing.

“No,” she laughed. “but I can read your soul, and see your memories. It’s interesting how things have changed since I was cast down here. You’re one of Phil’s sons aren’t you?”

“Yes”

“I’ve seen his youngest down here before, but I didn’t think I’d get to meet another so soon”

“You’ve seen Tommy?”

“Several times, it always saddened me that I could not reach him after his first visit here.”

Techno felt nauseous which was weird because he didn’t have a body. “How many times? How many times did you see him here?”

Kristen clicked her tongue “It would do you no good to know that information, it would only torment you further”

He wanted to push, but he knew the goddess was right, knowing wouldn’t help him now.

“So, I’m dead then?”

“Yes, though I suspect it won’t be for long,” Kristen said with a small smile, “knowing your family, you’ll find your way back to the land of the living soon enough. They’re all scrambling to find a way now.”

“But that’s not how it works, is it?”

“Usually not,” she shrugged, “but what can I say, you’re one of Phil’s boys. I wouldn’t be surprised if Phil flew down here himself to come and get you. He tried with Tommy a few times, but he was always too late and I’d have to tell him that his soul had moved on.”

“You couldn’t have been more specific?”

“And drive the man into insanity? Knowing his child was being killed and brought back to life for the fun of it? Dream wasn’t exactly a known villain at the time. No, it was much kinder to tell him his child had passed on and was in a better place.”

“But it was a lie,” Techno argued, “maybe, we could have found him earlier if we had known he was alive.”

“Or maybe, you wouldn’t have found him at all.” Kristen said “maybe you wouldn’t have become a hero, maybe ExDee would still be alive and protecting his brother. There’s too many what ifs, I did what I thought was best for Phil and I stand by that.”

Techno thought about this for a moment before sighing, “You said my family is trying to bring me back?”

“Yes.” Kristen nodded and with a wave of her hand two images appeared in the space next to them. “You’re father, as I predicted, is currently preparing to come pick you up himself” she gestured to the image and Techno watched as his dad frantically packed a bag while talking to someone over his comm.

I don’t give two shits about the hero commision. Phil snapped as he shoved granola bars into the backpack. I don’t have time to fix your messes, figure it out yourself. Feel free to consider this my official resignation.

The image faded away as Techno frowned “did he just quit being a hero?”

“Can you blame him?” Kristen said “this is the second time he has lost a son partially due to the commission’s negligence, he blames them for the injuries that ultimately ended your life. You would have lived, had Eret not been a traitor or had the commission stepped in themselves once they realized the rest of the heroes were unable to come and assist you.”

“You said my family,” Techno sighed, “so what kind of chaos are my brothers causing right now?”

Kristen smiled at the question and turned her attention onto the second image.

Tommy was getting frustrated.

“Sam, you have to let me in. I need to save my brother, I need to bring him back.” he argued, following Sam further into the lab, Wilbur not far behind him.

“For the last time Tommy, I am not getting you into Pandora’s Vault!” Sam snapped, “you need to let it go. I’m sorry about Techno, I really am, but we can’t risk letting Dream escape and I can’t say with one hundred percent certainty that if Dream tries to get out that you won’t help him.”

“That’s fucked up Sam” Wilbur said “Tommy wouldn’t help Dream escape, he just needs to get in there long enough to steal his power again-”

“And you,” Sam said turning to face Wilbur, “you of all people should recognize how dangerous that can be. Demons like Dream are slippery motherfuckers, hard to catch, harder to keep a hold on. And *Tommy* had a *deal* with him, a deal that we don’t know the exact details of. For all we know Dream could use their deal to control Tommy the way he did with Ranboo. The answer is no.”

Tommy and Wilbur exchanged glances, Wilbur giving Tommy a slight nod. Tommy took a deep breath, reached forward and gave Sam a hard shove shouting “FUCK YOU! YOU DICKHEAD I JUST WANT TO SAVE MY BROTHER AND YOU’RE BEING A SHITTY FRIEND BY NOT HELPING US!”

Wilbur’s eyes widened. “Tommy,” he said, pulling him away from the hero. “That’s enough, you’re right Sam I’m sorry we’re just taking this whole thing pretty hard. C’mon Tommy let’s go find dad,”

“Whatever you fucking bitch I hate all of you!” Tommy growled as Wilbur lead him out of the lab and towards the staircase.

“So did you get it?” Wilbur asked as they hit the bottom of the stairwell.

Tommy smirked, bringing Sam’s power to the forefront of his mind to show off the purple glowing eyes to Wilbur. “I got it.”

“Good,” Wilbur nodded, “let’s go break into prison.”

Technoblade sighed as the image fizzled out “you gotta be kidding me. Those idiots are going to get themselves arrested before they can even get close”

Kristen laughed, “I wouldn’t underestimate them, Tommy broke you out after all”

“Pretty sure that was intentional,” Techno frowned, “Dream always seemed to be one step ahead.”

“I wouldn’t count on it,” Kristen said “Dream likes to make himself seem smarter than he really is. Tommy defying him and breaking you out definitely wasn’t part of the plan. After all, Tommy had only just received his powers and Dream didn’t know what they were.”

“Are you omniscient or somethin’?”

“No,” she laughed, “just been observing Dream for a long time.”

Techno nodded to himself “well, since we’re here do you mind if I ask you a few questions?”

“Sure, Techno.”

Phil sighed, shouldering the backpack as he knocked on Wilbur’s bedroom door. Immediately the quiet whispering coming from behind the door stopped. He waited as there was rustling from inside the room as Wilbur opened his door slightly, giving Phil a far too innocent smile.

“Hi dad uh what- what do you need?”

“Is Tommy in there? I wanted to say goodbye” Phil said “I’m going to go get Techno.”

Wilbur let the door drift open more “what?”

“Yeah what bitch boy said” Tommy said from behind the taller male.

Phil chuckled, “I’m visiting a friend of mine, one who can hopefully get him back to us”

Tommy and Wilbur exchanged glances and Phil wondered when the two had gotten so in sync.

“And what if they can’t?” Wilbur asked, “Where do we go from there?”

“Well hopefully, Tommy will be the backup.” Phil said grinning as both of his sons looked at him in surprise “You aren’t that sneaky, I know you’re planning on snatching the revive power from Dream. Just try not to get arrested.”

The two brothers looked at each other and then back at Phil with matching grins that screamed mischief that made Phil wonder if giving them permission was possibly a mistake. Not that he really had the time to regret it.

“It’s going to take me about a day to reach my friend, I’ll message you once I know. Hopefully, it’ll be a message telling you to go back to the hospital so you’ll be there when Tech wakes up.” Phil remarked, pulling both of his sons into a hug. “we’re going to get him back, I promise”

Wilbur nodded determinedly as he hugged his dad back, next to him Tommy held the same determination, they weren’t losing their brother.

Phil pulled away and with that he walked to the balcony and took off, flying towards the only entrance he had ever found into the void.

It took him twenty hours of straight flying, but eventually he found himself standing on the edge of what was known as Tartarus. A giant crack in the ground that you couldn't see the bottom of, the entrance to the void, the place where centuries ago Kristen was banished to. It was rumored that originally Starborns had been the one to create the canyon, being so powerful they cut through the ground into the space inbetween worlds.

As much as he wanted to glide right down and find his son, he knew his wings wouldn't allow it so instead, Phil sat on the edge of the canyon and let his wings rest. He still had another two hours to fly before he'd get to the place where Kristen lived and if he fell before he reached it... well, he didn't want his boys to have to mourn him and Techno within such quick succession of each other.

He sat for an hour, eating a granola bar and drinking some water to keep his energy up before standing, preparing to launch himself into the void. He had done it before, several times, but the last time he had gone and visited Kristen had been about ten years ago. Phil took a deep breath, extending his wings carefully and letting himself fall forward. The wind rushed back him, whistling in his ears and snatching at his clothes, but he ignored it as he fell for what felt like several minutes before finally he could see it. The endless expanse of darkness that signified the entrance to the void from this world.

Without a second thought, he plunged into the portal.

Techno sighed as Kristen moved her rook forward.

"Checkmate" she smiled as Techno groaned.

“Bruuuuh” he sighed as he reset the board.

“No need” Kristen said “seems like Phil is finally here to collect you”

Techno looked up and followed her line of sight, he couldn't help the small smile that appeared on his face. In the distance moving steadily towards them was a green and gray figure.

It took another thirty minutes for Phil to finally glide to a stop in front of them. He didn't exactly land as there was nothing solid to land on. As Techno had learned, it was Kristen's abilities keeping them from falling endlessly in the void.

Phil smiled when their eyes met and Techno was a bit startled to see a few tears fall from his dad's eyes as he pulled him into a hug.

“Hi mate,” Phil murmured as Techno hugged him back. “So, can I take him back?”

Kristen smiled “you know my rules, Phil.” she said and Phil let go of Techno.

“Of course,” Phil nodded, “what do you want to know?”

“Tell me about cities” Kristen sighed, “you mentioned them in your last story, I want to know what modern cities look like.”

Techno was struck suddenly by a similar memory, one of Tommy asking him a familiar question. He watched as his father nodded and held a hand out, letting his eyes glow green with his power as his own soul surged forward. Kristen reached out carefully to touch it and they both sat there for a moment before Phil's powers deactivated and Kristen smiled at him.

“Interesting, there's so many people all living in such a cramped space. No wonder there's so much crime.” she smiled,

Phil laughed, “You’ve got a point, I’m going to take Techno up now, I’ll come visit again soon.”

“Like another ten years soon or actually soon?”

Phil winced “sooner than ten years, I promise”

“You better” the goddess glared as Phil chuckled nervously.

“Right Tech, let's go before your brother’s get themselves thrown in the vault” Phil said, reaching and grabbing Techno’s hand, his eyes once again glowing green as he interacted with Techno’s soul.

Together they made their way back up.

This time when Techno woke up, he was greeted with the familiar smell of a hospital and the sound of something beeping on his right. On his left side, there was someone holding onto his hand.

He looked over and couldn’t stop the smile from forming on his face at the sight of his little brother, sitting in the chair next to him, holding his hand and snoring softly dead asleep. As he looked around he noticed there were two more chairs sitting next to Tommy, currently empty. Technoblade turned back towards his little brother and gently reached an arm over and shook him awake.

“Tommy”

Tommy opened his eyes, blinking blearily at Techno before processing that Techno was awake. The next thing Techno knew there was a blond child pulling him into a hug.

“Hi Tommy” he murmured, hugging the boy back.

“I thought you were dead dickhead”

“I was”

“Yeah but I thought you were *dead*, dead. No coming back dead.”

“I *was*”

“But you clearly weren’t because you’re here.” Tommy said, pulling away, tears dripping down his cheeks.

“Oh Tommy,” Techno muttered, reaching up and wiping the tears from the boy’s cheeks. “I’m sorry-”

“Don’t do that to me again.” Tommy interrupted choking back sobs, “don’t *ever* do that again!”

Techno pulled his brother back into another hug, tucking him close as he whispered “I won’t, I promise” it was an impossible promise to make, but he’s had luck with those recently. And if it’s for Tommy? He knows he’ll find a way.

TOMMYINNIT WILL RETURN IN "The Heights We Reach" COMING TO AO3 SOON

Chapter End Notes

And it's over, well... sorta. We aren't done with these characters or this universe but this part of the journey is done and I'm so excited for whats to come. I hope you're excited too! For updates on the sequel or any of my other fics here's our discord <https://discord.gg/kn5fZhuM2e> I'm also so happy to say that we finished this story with 46,965 hits and 2453 kudos and counting. The amazing support has been what's kept this story going, so if you liked the fic and you're excited for the sequel let me know in the comments! I read every single one, multiple times, and I appreciate everyone whose left comments in the past. We'll see you in the sequel!! Goodbye for now <3

UPDATE

Hello everyone,

I just wanted to announce that I am currently in the process of rewriting The Skies We Seek with my own original characters. This version will be staying up and I'll be posting the rewrite on here as well though I'm not sure if that will stay up as I'm hoping to eventually get it published. Thank you everyone for all the support on this fic, if you go read the rewrite I hope you love it as much as you did this one. I'm not sure as to whether or not I will be writing this version's sequel, I'm no longer an active member of this fandom and I've really lost the motivation. The story line will be continued though, I do plan to write The Heights We Reach with my own characters. I hope you'll follow me on this new journey.

Thank you for everything,
Bee

End Notes

Thanks so much for reading! This is a brand new story so if you liked it let me know! Comments are super motivational to me and while I usually don't respond (because I'm hella awkward) I read every single one (often multiple times). anyway, thanks again for reading and I'll see you guys later <3

Please [drop by the Archive and comment](#) to let the creator know if you enjoyed their work!